



EX LIBRIS

BANCROFT LIBRARY

gathered there by the French, from the Spaniards, and other nations, who were
 great numbers of them, brought up to sea, and were the first of
 the Indians, who were taken, and carried to the West Indies, and
 were by them kept and sold, as slaves, to the Dutch, and carried
 to the West Indies, to be sold, and there were taken
 from the Spaniards: but the greatest part of the Indians, who
 inhabit the Western part, is said, and before the discovery of
 copper, of use they make, and there are many more in the
 same they dole they take.

The
History of Trauayle
 in the
 West and East Indies, and other
 countreys lying eyther way,
 towards the fruitfull and ryche
 Moluccaes.

to come by the same, and to be taken, and carried to sea, and
 great trees. But after the discovery of copper, and the
 found, as they say in the reports of the Spaniards, and the
 early, it was there found in both these places, and
 before it is found, and brought. Therefore when the report

Gathered in parte, and done into English by
 Richarde Eden.

to be taken, and when they have found it, they take the same, and
 before it, whether it be in the woods, or in the places, as I have
 seen. And if it be found in the woods, they make the
 place very dense, before they come to begin, then they digge
 eight or ten fowle in length, and as much in breadth: but
 they get no silver there, because of the use, or more, and therefore
 left to the matter of the mine, digging roundly, then they
 make all the earth, which they have taken out of the hole
 loose, and if they find any gold, they take it, and if
 not, they digge a little deeper, and so they continue
 in digging, and

Imprinted at London
 by Richarde Iugge.
 1577

Eden. The Discoveries.
 Part III
 377

E 141

.E23

1940

PT. 3

The
History of Travels
in the
West and East Indies, and other
countries lying either way,
towards the fruitful and rich
Indies.

Gathered in parts, and now into English by
Richard Ligon.

Printed at London
by Richard Ligon.
1677

Part III

mynes, there is also from day to day found, or otherwyle gotten,
 great treasure of such wrought gold as hath ben in y^e custodie of
 the subdued Indians & theyr kynges, aswel of such as they haue
 geuen for theyr syne and raunsome, or otherwyle, as frendes
 to the Christians, besyde that whiche hath ben violently taken
 from the rebelles: but the greatest parte of the wrought golde
 whiche the Indians haue, is base, and holdeth somewhat of
 copper, of this they make bassettes and chaynes, and in the
 same they close theyr iewels whiche theyr women are accus-
 tomed to weare, & esteemed more then al the richesse of the worlde.
 The maner howe golde is geathered, is this, eyther of suche as
 is founde in *Zanana*, that is to saye in the playnes and ryuers of
 the champion countrey beyng without trees, whether the earth
 be with grasse or without, or of suche as is sometymes founde on
 the land without the ryuers in places where trees growe, so that
 to come by the same, it shalbe requisite to cut downe many and
 great trees. But after which so euer of these two maners it be
 founde, eyther in the ryuers or breaches of waters, or els in the
 earth, I wyl shewe howe it is founde in both these places, and
 howe it is separate and poured. Therefore when the myne
 or byrne is discouered, this chaunceth by searchyng and pro-
 uoyng in such places as by certaine signes and tokens do appeare
 to skylful men apte for the generation of golde, and to holde
 golde: and when they haue found it, they folowe the myne, and
 labour it, whether it be in the ryuer, or in the playne, as I haue
 sayde. And if it be founde on the playne, fyrst they make the
 place very cleane where they entende to dygge, then they dygge
 epyght or tenne foote in length, and as muche in breadth: but
 they goe no deeper then a spanne or two, or more, as shal seeme
 best to the maister of the myne, dyggyng equally, then they
 washe all the earth whiche they haue taken out of the sayde
 space, and if herein they fynde any golde, they folowe it, and if
 not, they dygge a spanne deeper, and washe the earth as they
 dyd before: and if then also they fynde nothyng, they continue
 in diggyng and washyng y^e earth as before, vntyl they come to the
 harde rocke or stone: and if in fine they fynde no golde there,
 they folowe no further to seeke golde in that place, but goe to
 an other part. And it is to be understoode, that when they haue
 founde

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

377

founde the myne, they solowe it in dygggng, in the same man-
 nire in leuell and deapth, vntyll they haue made an ende of all
 the myne whiche that place conteyneth, if it appeare to be riche.
 This myne ought to consist of certayne feete or pales in length
 or breadth, accor dyng to certayne orders determined, and with-
 in that compasse of earth, it is not lawefull for any other to digge
 for golde: And where as endeth the myne of hym that fyrste
 founde the golde, immediatly it is lawfull for any other man that
 wpll, with a staffe to assigne hym selfe a place by the syde of the
 same, inclosing it with stakes or pales as his owne. These mines
 of *Zauana* (that is, such as are found in the plaines) ought euer to
 be sought neare to some ryuer or brooke, or spring of water, or
 dyke, or standng poole, to thende that the golde may be washed,
 for the which purpose they vse the labour of certayne Indians,
 as they do other in dygggng of the myne. And when they haue
 dygged out the myne, they fyll certayne trayes with that earth,
 whiche other Indians haue the charge immediatly to receyue
 at theyr handes, and to cary those trayes of earth to the water,
 where it may bee washed: Yet do not they that byng it,
 washe it, but deliuer it to other, puttyng it out of theyr owne
 trayes into theys, whiche they haue redy in theyr handes to re-
 ceyue it. These washers for the most part are the Indian wo-
 men, because this woork is of lesse paine and traueple then any
 other. These women when they washe, are accustomed to lye
 by the water syde, with theyr legges in the water euen by to the
 knees, or lesse, as the place serueth theyr purpose: and thus hold-
 yng the trayes with earth in theyr handes by þ handles thereof,
 and puttyng the same into the water, they moue them rounde
 about, after the maner of sperryng, with a certayne aptnesse,
 in suche sorte that there entyreth no moze water into the trays
 then serueth theyr turne, and with the selfe same apte mouyng
 of theyr trays in the water, they euer auoyde the soule water
 with the earth out of the one syde of the vessel, and receyue
 in cleane water on the other syde thereof, so that by this meanes
 by litle and litle, the water walseth the earth as the lychter
 substauce of the trays, and the golde as the heauyer mat-
 ter resteth in the bottome of the same, beyng rounde and
 holowe in the myddest lyke vnto a barbary basin: And when
 all

all the earth is annoyded, and the gold geathered together in the bottome of the tray, they put it a part, and returne to take more earth, whiche they walthe contynually as befoze. And thus they that labour in this woozke, do geather daply suche portion of golde as shall please God to graunt to the Patrones of these Indians, and suche other as trauayle in the same. Furthermore it is to be noted, that for euery two Indians that walthe, it is requisite that two other serue them to bypng earth from the myne, and other two to bzeake the same small, and fyl theyr trayes therewith. Also beyde these labourers, it is necessarye that there be other people in the place where they woozke & rest in the night: these are suche as make theyr bread, and prouide for victuals, and other necessaries. So that to conclude, there are in al, syue persons ordinarilie assigned to euery tray of washers. There is an other manner of wozyng the mynes, in ryuers or brookes of runnyng waters: and this is, that in auoydpyng the water of his course, after that the beddes of the ryuers are dype and vterly emptied, they synde golde among the breaches, chstes, and rystes of stones, and among all that is in the bottome of the chanell, and where naturally the ryuer runneth of greatest foze: So that it chaunceth sometyne, that when the bedde of the ryuer is good and ryche, they synde in it great quantitie of gold. And therfoze your Maiestie ought to vnderstand for a general rule, as it appeareth in fact, that all golde is engendred in the toppes and hyghest places of the mountaynes, and in continuance of tyme is by litle and litle brought downe to the vales and playnes by the wayes of rayne, and the falles of spynges, ryuers, and brookes, hauyng theyr originall in the mountaynes, and discending from the same, notwithstanding it is ostentymes founde in the playnes farre from the mountaynes. But when it chaunceth to be founde in great quantitie, it is for the most part among the mountaynes, and in the ryuers, or theyr bzaunches, more then in any other part of the playne: and in these two maners it is commonly founde most abundantly. And for the better prooffe that golde is engendred on hygh, and is brought dotone into the lowe places, I haue one great token therof, whiche causeth me to belceue it for certayne: and this is, to consyder that coles neuer putrifie nor

corrupt

corrupt vnder the ground, if they be made of strong woodde. Wherby it chaunceth, that dygging the earth by the foundes or indented places of the mountaynes, or on the sydes, & breaking a myne in the earth where it had been broken before, and hauing nowe dygged one or two or thye Poles in measure, the myners founde certayne coles of wood vnder the same leuel where they founde golde, and this I say in the earth whiche was taken for a Virgin, that is to saye, such as had not before been opened for any myne: the whiche coles coulde not naturally be engendred there, or enter in by any meanes, but when the superficial part of the earth was equal with the leuel where the coles were founde, it is like that the coles were left there by some occasion of tyme, and that they fastened there in tyme, and that afterwarde in long continuance of tyme, they were by litle and litle couered with the earth, whiche the often shewes of rayne washed from the mountaynes, so that by the course of yeres the earth ouergrewe the coles vnto the sayd leuel & measure, which had before tyme been the superficial part of the earth, where the coles and golde were found together: whereby it may appeare that the golde was no more engendred there then were the coles, but brought thither from the mountaynes by the fallis of waters as we haue sayd, forasmuch as the mountaynes are the Matrices and bowels of all ryche metals. Further and besyde this, I say that in howe muche more the golde is gone farre from the naturall place of his generation to the place where it is founde; it is so much the more purified and fined, and of a better caract, and the nearer that it is founde to his proper myne or beyne where it is engendred, it is so much the baser, fouler, and more crude, and of a baser alay and caract, and doth wast so muche the more in meltyng, and remaineth more bryckle. Sometymes there are founde graines of golde of great quantitie, and of great weyght about the earth, and sometymes also vnder the earth: And the greatest of all other that was founde to this day in the Indies, was that whiche was lost in the sea about the *Islande Beata*, whiche weyghed thye thousande and two hundred Castellans of gold, which are in value foure thousand a hundred thyrtye and eyght ducades of golde, whiche twigh one *Arroas* and seuen pounce, or thyrtye and two pounce, after twelue ounces

ces to the pounce, whiche make threescore and foure markes of golde. And I sawe in the yeere .1515. in the handes of *Mychel Passamonte* treasurer to your maiestie, two graines, of the whiche one wayed seuen poundes, which are .xiiii. markes, and are in value about threescore and fyue ducades of golde every marke: the other was of .x. markes, whiche are fyue poundes of lyke value, and of very good golde of .xxii. caractes, and better: There are also founde many other great graynes, although not equall vnto these in bygnesse. And forasmuch as I haue spoken of gold, I haue thought good to declare somewhat howe the Indians can very excellently gyfte suche vesselles of copper and base golde as they make: for they can geue them so fayre and dorythyng a coloure, that al the masse which they gyfte, appeareth as though it were golde of .xxii. caracies, and better. This colour they geue with a certayne hearbe, as though it were wrought by y^e art of any goldsmith of Spayne or Italie, and woulde of them bee esteemed as a thyng of great ryches, and a secrete maner of gyldyng. And for as muche as I haue spoken sufficiently of the mynes of golde, I wyl nowe speake somewhat of copper, because I haue made mention thereof. This metal is founde in many of the Ilandes of the Indies, and also in the firme lande, and is founde dayly in great quantitie, holdyng somewhat of golde. But for the desyre that our men haue to golde, they nothyng extreme the copper, although there myght great commoditie and profyt be had thereby, and also by other metals, whiche they nothyng regarde, except syluer, which is founde abundantly in that parte of the firme lande whiche is called newe Spaine. But of this it shal suffice to haue saide thus muche, because I haue moze particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall hystory of India.

A marke, is a pounce of viii. ounces summa .xvi. li. weyght. viii. ounces, after xii. ounces to the li.

Of the maner of fyshyng for pearles.



The Indians exercise this kynde of fyshyng for the most part in y^e coastes of the North in *Cubagua* and *Cumana*, and many of them which dwell in the houses of certayne particular lordes in the Ilandes of *San Dominico* and *Sancti Iobannis*, resort to the Ilande of *Cubagua*

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Cubagua, for this purpose. Theyr custome is to go fyue, syxe, or seuen, or moze in one of theyr *Canoas* or barkes, carely in the moornyng to some place in the sea thereabout, where it appeareth vnto them that there should be great plentie of those shell fyshes (which some call *Dafcles*, and some *Dysters*) wherein pearles are engendred, & there they plunge them selues vnder the water, euen vnto the bottome, sauyng one that remaineth in the *Canoa* or boate, which he keepeth styll in one place as neare as he can, lookyng for theyr returne out of the water: And when one of them hath ben a good whyle vnder the water, he rylseth vp, and commeth swymmyng to the boate, entryng into the same, and leapyng there al the *Dysters* which he hath taken and broughte wih hym (for in these are the pearles found) and when he hath there rested hym selfe a whyle, and eaten part of the *Dysters*, he returneth agayne to the water, where he remaineth as long as he can endure, and then rylseth agayne, and swymmeth to the boate wih his pray, where he resteth hym as befoze, and thus continueth courle by courle, as do all the other in lyke maner, beyng al most expert swymmers and dyuers: and when the nyght draweth neare, they returne to the *Ilande* to theyr houses, and present all the *Dysters* to the maister or steward of the house of theyr lord, who hath the charge of the sayde *Indians*, and when he hath geuen them somewhat to eate, he layeth vp the *Dysters* in safe custodie, vntyll he haue a great quantitie thereof, then he causeth the same fysher men to open them, and they fynd in euery of them pearles, other great or small, two, or thre, or foure, and sometymes fyue or syxe, and many small graines, accordyng to the liberaltie of nature. They saue the pearles both smal and great whiche they haue founde, and eyther eate the *Dysters* if they wyl, or cast them away, hauyng so great quantitie thereof, that they in maner abhoze them. These *Dysters* are of harde fleshe, and not so pleasaunt in eatyng as are ours of *Spayne*. This *Iland* of *Cubagua* where this maner of fyshing is exercised, is in the North coaste, and is no bygger then the *Ilande* of *Zeland*. Oftentimes the sea increaseth greatly, and much moze then y fishers for pearles would, because where as the place is very deepe, a man can not naturally rest at the bottome,
by

by reason of the abundaunce of any substance whiche is in hym, as I haue oftentimes proued . For although he may by violence and force discende to the bottome, yet are his feete lyfted by agayne, so that he can contynue no tyme there : and therefore where the sea is very deepe, these Indian fyshers vse to tye two great stones about them with a cord, on euery syde one, by the weyght whereof they discende to the bottome, and remayne there vntyll them lyfted to ryse agayne, at whiche tyme they vlose the stones, and ryse by at theyr pleasure. But this theyr aptnesse and agilitie in swymmyng, is not the thyng that causeth men most to marueyle : but rather to consider howe many of them can stande in the botome of the water for the space of one whole houre, and some moxe or lesse, accordyng as one is moxe apt heereunto then an other . An other thyng there is whiche seemeth to me very straunge : and this is, that where as I haue oftentimes demaunded of some of these Lordes of the Indians, yf the place where they are accustomed to fysh for pearles, beyng but litle and narrowe, wyl not in short tyme be utterly without Oysters, yf they consume them so fast. They all answered me, that although they be consumed in one part, yet if they goe a fyshyng in an other part, or an other coaste of the Islande, or at an other contrary wynde, and contynue fyshyng there also vntyll the Oysters be lykewyse consumed, and then returne agayne to the first place, or any other place where they fished before, and emptied the same in lyke maner, they finde them agayne as full of Oysters as though they had neuer been fished. Wherby we may iudge, that these Oysters eyther remoue from one place to an other, as do other fishes, or els that they are engendred and encrease in certaine ordinarie places. This Island of *Cumaná* & *Cubagua*, where they fysh for these pearles, is in the twelue degree of the part of the laid coast which inclineth toward the North. Likewise pearles are founde and geathered in the South sea, called *Mare del Sur*, & the pearles of this sea are very big, yet not so big as they of the Island of pearles, called *de las perlas*, or *Margaritea*, which the Indians cal *Terarequi*, lying in the gulfe of *Sainct Michael*, where greater pearles are founde, and of greater pryce, then in any other coast of the North sea.

Of this reade
more largely in
the decades.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

By the computation of these
four grains make a
Caract.

in *Cumana*, or any other part. I speake this as a true testimonie of syght, hauing been long in that South sea, and making curious inquisition to be certaynely enscourmed of al that parteyneth to the syshyng of pearles. From this Ilande of *Terarequi*, there was brought a pearle of the fashyon of a *Peare*, weighing thyrtye and one *Caractes*, which *Petrus Arias* had among a thousand and so many poundes weyght of other pearles, whiche he had when captayne *Gaspar Morales* (befoze *Petrus Arias*) passed to the sayde Ilande in the yeere .1515. whiche pearle was of great pryce. From the sayde Ilande also, came a great and very rounde pearle, which I brought out of the sea, this was as bygge as a smal pellet of a *Stonebowe*, and of the weyght of twentie and syx *Caractes*: I bought it in the citie of *Panama*, in the sea of *Sur*, and payde for it syx hundred and fytie tymes the weyght therof of good golde, and had it thre yeeres in my custodie, and after my retorne into *Spayne*, sold it to the Earle of *Nansao Marquesse* of *Zenete*, great Chamberlayne to your Maiestie, who gaue it to the Marquesse his wyfe, the Lady *Mentia* of *Mendoza*. I thynke verily that this pearle was the greatest, fayrest, and roundest that hath been seene in those partes. For your maiestie ought to vnderstand, that in the coaste of the sea of *Sur*, there are founde a hundred great pearles rounde after the fashyon of a *Peare*, to one that is perfectly rounde and great. This Ilande of *Terarequi*, which the Christians call the Ilande of pearles, and other call it the Ilande of *Floures*, is founde in the eight degree on the South syde of the fyne land, in the prouince of golden *Castyle*, or *Beragus*, and these are the coastes of the fyne lande, where pearles are founde euen vnto this day: I vnderstande also that there are pearles founde in the prouince and Ilandes of *Cartagenia*. And since your maiestie appoynted me a gouernour and captayne, I haue made further searche, and am aduertysed that pearles are founde in diuers other places, as about the Ilande of *Codego*, whiche lyeth agaynst the mouth of that port of the Ilande of *Cartagenia*, which the Indians call *Coro*, the which Ilande and port are on the North syde, in the tenth degree of the coastes of the fyne lande.

Of

Of the familiaritie which certayne of the Indians
haue with the deuyll, and howe they receyue
answere of him of thinges to come.



When the Indians begyn theyr battayle, or
goe to any combat, or attempt any other
great matter, they haue certayne elect men,
whom they reuerendly esteeme, & call them
Tequinas, which in theyr tounge is as much
to say as maisters: notwithstanding that
they call euery man, that is cunning in any
science, by the same name, as fyshers, foulers, hunters, or ma-
kers of nettes. These *Tequinas* therefore, they call the maisters
of theyr answers, because they speake with *Tuyra*, that is, the
deuyll, and byng them in answer what he sayeth, epyther as tou-
chyng such thinges as they haue to doe, or shall chaunce to them
the day folowng, or many dayes to come. For the deuyll, beyng
so auncient an Astronomer, knoweth the tymes of thinges, and
seeth howe they are naturally directed and inclyned, and ma-
keth them beleue that they come so to passe by his ordinaunce,
as though he were the Lorde and mouer of all that is and shalbe,
and that hee gyueth the day lyght, and rayne, causeth tempest,
and ruleth the stations of tymes, gyuyng lyfe, or takyng away
lyfe, at his pleasure: By reason whereof, the Indians be-
yng deceived of hym, and seeyng also suche effectes to come
certaynely to passe as hee hath tolde them before, beleue hym
in all other thinges, and honour him in many places with sa-
crifyces of the blood and lyues of men, and odoriferous spices:
And when God disposeth the contrary to that whiche the deuyll
hath spoken in oracle, whereby he is proued a lyer, he causeth the
Tequinas to perswade the people that hee hath chaunged his
mynd and sentence for some of their synnes, or deuise some such
lye as lyketh him best, beyng a skylful maister in such subtille and
craftie deuises, to deceyue the simple and ignozant people, which
hath small defence agaynst so mightie and craftie an aduersarie.
And as they call the deuyll *Tuyra*, so doe they in many places
call the Christians by the same name, thynkng that they great-
ly honour them thereby, as in deede it is a name very sute and
agreeable

C. i.

agreeable

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

385

agreeable to many of them, hauyng layde aparte all honestie and vertue, lyuyng moze lyke Dragons then men, among these symple people.

Before thynhabitauntes of the Mande of *Hispaniola* had receiued the Christian fayth, there was among them a secte of men, whiche liued solitarily in the desartes and woods, & led theyr lyfe in silence and abstinence, moze straightly then euer dyd the philosophers of Pythagoras secte, absteinyng in lyke maner from the eatyng of all thinges that lyue by blood, contented onely with such frutes, hearbes, and rootes, as the desartes and woods imynistred vnto them to cate: The professours of this secte were called *Piaces*. They gaue them selues to the knowledge of naturall thinges, and vsed certayne secrete magicall operations and superstitions, wheremy they had familiaritie with spirites, which they allured into theyr owne bodyes at such tymes as they would take vppon them to tell of thinges to come, whiche they dyd in maner as foloweth. When any of the kynges had occasion to call any of them out of the desartes for this purpose, theyr custome was to sende them a portion of theyr fyne bread of *Cazabbi* or *Mairzum*, and with humble request and suite to desyre them to tell them of suche thinges as they would demaunde. After the request graunted, and the place and day appoynted, the *Piaces* commeth, with two of his disciples waytyng on hym, wheremy of the one byngeth with him a vessell of a secrete water, and the other a litle syluer bell. When he commeth to the place, he sitteth downe on a rounde seate made for hym of purpose, where hauyng his disciples, the one standyng on the one hande, and the other on the other, euen in the presence of the kyng and certayne of his nobles (for the common people are not admitted to these mysteries) and turnyng his face towarde the desarte, he begynneth his inchaunment, and calleth the spirite with loude voyce by certayne names, whiche no man vnderstandeth but hee and his disciples. After he hath done thus a whyle, if the spirite yett deserre his comyng, hee dzynketh of the layde water, and therewith waxeth hotte and furious, and inuerteth and turneth his inchaunment, and letteth him selfe blood with a thorne, manerously turmoylyng him selfe, as wee reade of the furious *Sybilles*, not ceassyng vntyl the spirit be come: who at his commyng

entirely

entrench into him, and ouerthroweth him, as it were a greyhound should ouerturne a Squerell, then for a space, hee seemeth to lye, as though hee were in great payne, or in a rapte, woonderfully tormentyng him selfe, duryng whiche agonie, the other disciple shaketh the siluer bell continually. Thus when the agonie is past, and he lyeth quietly (yet without any sense or feelyng) the kyng, or some other in his stead, demaundeth of him what he desireth to know: and the spirit answereth by the mouth of the rapte *Piaces*, with a directe and perfecte answer to all poyntes: Insomuche that on a tyme certayne Spanyarde beyng present at these mysteries with one of the kynges, and in the Spanyshe tounge demaundyng the *Piaces* of their shippes which they looked for out of Spayne, the spirite answered in the Indian tounge, and tolde them what day and houre the shippes departed from Spayne, how many they were, and what they brought, without sayling in any poynte. If he be also demaunded of the eclypse of the Sunne or Moone (which they greatly feare and abhorre) he giueth a perfecte answer, and the lyke of tempestes, famin, plentie, warre or peace, and such other things. When all the demaundes are finished, his disciples call him aloude, ryngyng the siluer bell at his eare, and blowyng a certayne powder into his nosethilles, whereby he is rapled as it were from a dead sleape, beyng yet somewhat heauy headed and saynte a good whyle after. Thus beyng agayne rewarded of the kyng with more bread, hee departeth agayne to the desartes with his disciples. But since the Christian fapth hath been dispersed throughout the Ilande, these deuyllshe practises haue ceased, and they of the members of the deuyll, are made the members of Christ by baptisme, forsakynge the deuyll and his wokes, with the bayne curiositie of desyre of knowledge of thinges to come, whereof for the most parte it is better to be ignozant, then with vexation to know that which can not be auoyded.

Furthermore, in many places of the firme lande, when any of the kynges dye, all his householde seruantes, as well women as men whiche haue continually serued him, kyll them selues, helceuyng as they are taught by the deuyll *Tuyra*, that they whiche kyll them selues when the kyng dyeth, goe with him to heauen, and serue him in the same place and offyce as

Cc.ii.

they

they dyd before on the earth whyle hee lyued : and that all that refuse so to doe, when after they dye by theyr naturall death or ocherwylse, theyr soules to dye with theyr bodyes, and to be dissolued into ayre, and become nothyng, as doe the soules of Waggys, Byrdes, Fythes, or other brute beastes : and that on-ly the other may enioy the pryulledge of immortallitie for euer, to serue the kyng in heauen . And of this falsse opinion commeth it, that they which sowe corne, or set rootes for the kynges bread, and geather the same, are accustomed to kylle them selues, that they may enioy this pryulledge in heauen, and for the same purpose, cause a portion of the graine of *Maizium*, and a bundle of *Iucca* (whereof theyr bread is made) to be burped with them in their graues, that the same may serue them in heauen, if perhappes there should lacke seedes to sowe, and therefore they take this with them, to begyn withall, until *Tuyra* (who maketh them all these fayre promises) proude them of greater quantitie. This haue I my selfe seene in the toppe of the mountaynes of *Guaturo*, where hauing in pryson the kyng of that prouince (who rebelled from the obedience of your maestie) and demaundayng of him to whom paternyd those sepultures or graues which I saue in his house : hee answered, that they were of certayne Indians which slue them selues at the death of his father . And because they are ofrentimes accustomed to bury great quantities of wrought gold with them, I caused twoo graues to be opened, wherein was nothyng founde but a vessell full of the graine of *Maizium*, & a bundle of *Iucca*, as I haue sayde . And demaundayng the cause hereof, of the kyng and the other Indians : they answered, that they that were burped there, were the labourers of the grounde, and men skylfull in sowyng of seedes, and makyng of bread, and seruantes to the kynges father, and to the ende that their soules should not dye with theyr bodyes, they slue them selues at the death of the kyng theyr maister, to lyue with hym in heauen, and to the intent that they myght serue him there in the same offyce, they reserued that *Maizium* and *Iucca*, to sowe it in heauen . Wherevnto I aunswcred them in this maner, Beholde howe your *Tuyra* deceyueth you, and howe all that hee teacheth you is falsse. You see howe in so long a tyme since they are dead, they haue not yet taken away this *Maizium* and *Iucca*, which

which is nowe putrified and worzth nothyng, and not lyke to bee sown in heauen. To this the kynge replied, saying, in that they haue not taken it away, nor sown it in heauen, the cause is, that they chaunced to synde enough there, by reason whereof they had no neede of this. To this erroure many thinges were sayd, which seemed of litle force to remoue him from his false opinion, and especially any such as at that age are occupped of the deuyl, whom they paynt of the selfe same fourme and colour, as hee appeareth vnto them in dyuers shapcs and fourmes. They make also Images of golde, copper, and wood, to the same similitudes, in terrible shapcs, and so variable, as the paynters are accustomed to paynt them at the feete of saint Michaell tharchangell, or in any other place, where they paynte them of most horrible portiture. Lykewyse when the deuyl greatly intendeth to feare them, hee threatheth to sende them great tempestes, whiche they call *Furacanas*, or *Haurachanas*, and are so vehement, that they ouerthrow many houles, and great trees. And I haue seene in mountaynes, full of many and great trees, that for the space of thre quarters of a league the mountayne hath been subuerted, and the trees ouerthrowen, and plucked out of the earth with the rootes: a thng doubletse so fearefull and terrible to beholde, that it may verply appeare to bee done by the hande of the deuyl. And in this case the Christian men ought to consider with good reason, that in all places where the holy sacrament is reserued, the sayde tempestes are no moze so outragious, or so perillous as they were wont to bee.

Doctrine not
worthy for a
Christian man.

Of the temperature of the regions vnder or neare to the burnt lyne, called *Torrida Zona*, or the Equinoctiall, and of the dyuers seasons of the yeere.



The landes and regions that are neare about the clymes of the Equinoctiall lyne, are naturally hot, although they be otherwise temperate by the diuine prouidence: & therefore such fleshe or fysh as is taken and kylled in these regions, can not be preserued from putrification, except it be rostted, sodden, or perboyd, the same day that it is kyld. And wheras I haue sayd, that

Cc.iii.

such

such regions are naturally hotte, and yet temperate by the prouidence of God, it is so in deede : and therefore not without cause the auncient aucthours were of opinion, that the burnt lyne, or *Torrída Zona*, where passeth the lyne of the Equinoctiall, shoulde be vnhabitable, by reason the Sun hath greater dominion in that place, then in any other of the sphere, remaynyng continually betwene the two tropykes of Cancer and Capricorne : For when in these regions the earth is opened or dygged from the superficiall parte thereof to the deapth of a mans heygth, it is founde temperate, and within this space the trees and plants fasten and spread their rootes, and no deeper, extendyng the same as farre in breadth in the grounde as doe they? bryanches in the ayre, and enter no deeper into the grounde then I haue sayde, because that beneath the deapth of the sayde space of a mans heygth the earth is very hotte, the vpper part beyng temperate and very moyst, as well by reason of the abundaunce of water whiche falleth from heauen vpon that earth at certayne ordinarie seasons of the yeece, as also for the multitude of great ryuers, brookes, springes, and marynes, whereby the myghtie and supreme Lord which made these landes, hath most prudently provided for the preservation of the same.

There are also many rough and hygh mountaynes, with temperate ayre, and pleasaunt, cleare, and moderate nyghtes : of the whiche particularitie the auncient wyriters hauyng no certayne knowledge, affirmed the said burnt line or *Torrída Zona*, or Equinoctiall, to be naturally vnhabitable. As touching which thing I am able to witness the contrary by testimonie of syght and feeling, as by most certayne senses, hauyng lyued many yeeres in these regions, by reason whereof better credite ought to be giuen to me, then to such as haue grounded their opinionion onely vpon coniectures. And to speake further of the situation of these regions, you shall vnderstand that the coaste of the North sea, beyng in the gulfe of *Vraba*, and in the porte of *Dariena*, where the *Hypps* arryue whiche come out of *Spayne*, is in the sixte degree and a halfe, and in the seuench, and from sixe and a halfe, vnto eyght, except a small poynt which entrech into the sea towarde the North. That poynt which of this lande and new parte of the worlde lyeth most towarde the East, is the cape of saint *Augustine*, which

is in the eyght degree: So that the sayd gulfe of *Vraba*, is distant from the Equinoctiall lynes, from a hundred & twentie, to a hundred and thirtie leagues, and thre quarters of a league, after that accompte of .xvii. leagues and a halfe for every degree from pole to pole: and thus for a litle more or lesse, goeth all the coast. By reason whereof, in the citie of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, and in all that course of the foresayde gulfe of *Vraba*, at all tymes of the yeere the dayes and nyghtes are in maner of equall length: and if there bee any difference betweene them by reason of this small distance from the Equinoctiall, it is so litle, that in .xxiii. houres, making a naturall day, it can not bee percepued but by the iudgement of speculatiue men, and such as vnderstande the sphere: From hence the North starre is seene very lowe. And when the starres, whiche are called the guardens of the North starre, are vnder the Chariot, it can not be seene, because it is vnder the horizontall. And whereas I haue sayde before that it rayneth in these regions at certayne ordinarie tymes, it is so in deed: For it is wynter and summer there at contrary tymes to that which is in Spayne, where the greatest colde of frost and rayne is in December and January, and the greatest heate of sommer about saint Iohns day at Hydsommer, or in the moneth of Iuly: But in golden Castile or *Beragua*, it is contrary, for the sommer and tyme of greatest drought & without rayne, is at Christmas, and a moneth before, and a moneth after, & the tyme when it rayneth most, is about Hydsommer, and a moneth before, and a moneth after. And this season which they call wynter, is not for that it is any colder then, then at any other tyme of the yeere, or hotter at Christmas then at other seasons, the tyme in these regions being euer after one maner: but for that, that, in this tyme whiche they call wynter, the Sunne is hydde from theyr sightes, by reason of cloudes and rayne, more then at other times. Yet forasmuche as for the most part of the yeere they lye in a cleare, open, and temperate ayre, they somewhat shyinke and feele a litle colde duryng the tyme of the sayde moyst and cloudy ayre, although it be not colde in deed, or at the least such colde as hath any sensible sharpnesse.

Cc.iiii.

Of

Lden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

391

Of dyuers particuler thinges, as woormes, ser-
pentes, beastes, foules, trees. &c.



Any other thinges might be sayd, and much differpng from these wherof I haue spoken. But to lette passe the multitude of thinges whiche are as variable as the power of nature is infinite, and to speake of such thinges as come chiefly to my remembraunce, as most worthie to be noted, I will first speake of certayne litle and troublous beastes, which may seeme to bee engendred of nature to molest & vex men, to shewe them & giue them to vnderstand, how small and vyle a thing may offende and disquiet them, to shende that they may remember the princippall end for the which they were created, that is, to know their maker and procurer of their saluation by the way whiche is open to all Christian men, and all other which will open the eyes of theyr vnderstandyng. And although the thinges whereof wee entende nowe to speake, may seeme vyle and litle to be esteemed, yet are they worthy to bee noted and considered, to vnderstande the difference and variable workes of nature. So it is therefore, that whereas in many partes of the firme lande, by the whiche as well the Christians as Indians doe trauaile, there are suche marshes and waters in the way, that they are sayne to go without breeches among the hearbes and weedes, by reason whercof, certayne smal beastes or woormes (which they cal *Garapates*) much lyke vnto tykes, cleaue fast to their legges. These woormes are as litle as the pouder of beaten salt, and cleaue so fast, that they can by no meanes bee taken away, except the place bee nointed with oyle: and after that the legges be nointed a whyle with oyle, or the other partes where these litle tykes are fastened, they scrape the place with a knyfe, and so take them away. But the Indians whiche haue no oyle, smoke them, and burne them with fyre, and abyde great paynes in takyng them away by this meanes. Of other litle beastes whiche trouble men, and are engendred in theyr heades or other partes of theyr bodyes, I say that the Christian men which trauaile into these partes, haue them but seldeome tymes, and that not past one or two, & this al-

so very seldome : For passyng by the lyne of the Diameter where the compasse maketh difference of sayyng by the wynde called *Greco*, (that is, Northeast) and *Magistral* (that is, southwest) whiche is in the course of the Ilandes of *Azori*, they sayle but a litle way folowynge our viage by the west, but that all the lyle whiche the Christians carry with them, or are engendred in theyr heades, or other places of theyr bodyes, dye and utterly consume by litle and litle, and are not engendred in India, except in the heades of litle chyldren in those partes, aswell among the chyldren of the Christians whiche are bozne there, as also among the naturall Indians, who haue them commonly in theyr heades, and sometymes in other partes of theyr bodyes, and especially they of the prouince of *Cuenca*, whiche is a region contaynyng more then a hundred leagues in length, and embraseth the one and the other coast of the North sea, and of the East. When these Indians are infected with this fylthynesse, they dyesse and cleanse one an other : And they that exercise this, are for the most part women, who eate all that they take, and haue herein such dexteritie by reason of theyr exercise, that our men can not lyghtly attayne therunto. There is also another thyng greatly to be considered: and this is, howe the Christian men, beyng there cleave from this fylthynesse of India, aswell in theyr heades as the rest of theyr bodyes, yet when they returne to come agayne into Europe, and begyn to aryue in that place of the Ocean sea where we sayde before that these lyle dyed and forsooke them, sodenly in theyr repassyng by the same chyne (as though these lyle had tarped for them in that place) they can by no meanes auoyde them for the space of certayne dayes, although they change theyr shertes two or thre times in a day: These lyle are at first as litle as nittes, and growe by litle and litle, vntyl they be of the byggenesse that they are in *Spaine*. This haue I oftentimes proued, hauyng nowe foure tymes passed the Ocean sea by this viage. Besyde these wormes and vermyn whercof we haue spoken, there is another litle myscherous worme, whiche we may number among the kynnes of fleas, this pestilence the Indians call *Nigra*, and is muche lesse then a flea: it pearseth the fleshe of a man, and do launseth or cutteth the same (whyle
in

Vipers.

in the meane tyme it can neyther be scene nor taken) that from
 some it hath cut of theyr handes, and from other theyr feete,
 vntyll the remedy was founde to annoynt the place with oyle,
 and scrape it with a rasor. In the firme lande in golden
 Castyle or *Beragna*, there are many vipers lyke vnto them of
 Spayne: they that are bytten of them, dye in short space,
 for fewe lyue to the fourth day, except present remedy. Of
 these, some are of lesse kynde then other, and haue theyr taylor
 somewhat rounde, and leape in the ayre to assaile men, and
 for this cause, some call this kynde of vipers *Tyro*: theyr byt-
 tyng is most venomous, and for the most parte incurable.
 One of them chaunced to byte an Indian mayde whiche serued
 me in my house, to whom I caused the Surgians to mynister
 theyr ordinary cure, but they coulde do her no good, nor yet
 great one droppe of blood out of her, but onely a yelowe water,
 so that she dyed the thyrde day for lacke of remedy, as the lyke
 hath chaunced to dyuers other: This mayde was of the age
 of .xiii. yeeres, and spake the Spanysh tongue as if she had
 been bozne in Castyle: she sayde that the viper whiche byte her on
 the foote, was two spannes long, or litle lesse, and that to byte
 her, she lept in the ayre for the space of moze then fyre paces, as
 I haue hearde the lyke of other credible persons. I haue also
 scene in the firme lande a kynde of adders, very small, and of
 seuen or eyght foote long: these are so redde, that in the nyght
 they appeare lyke burnyng cooles, and in the day seeme as
 redde as bloodde, these are also venomous, but not so muche as
 the vipers. There are other muche lesse, and shorzer, and blacker:
 these come out of the ryuers, and wander sometymes farre
 on the lande, and are lykewyse venomous. There are also o-
 ther adders of a russet colour: these are somewhat bygger then
 the viper, and are hurtful and venomous. There are lykewyse
 an other sort of many colours, and very long: of these I sawe
 one in the yeere of Christ .1515. in the Island of *Hispaniola*, neere
 vnto the sea coastes, at the foote of the mountaynes called *Toder-
 nales*, when this adder was slayne, I measure her, and founde
 her to be moze then .xx. foote long, & somewhat moze then a mans
 fyft in byggnesse: and although she had thre or foure deadly
 woundes with a swoorde, yet dyed she not, nor stonke the
 same

Adders.

same daye, insonnuche that her blood contynued warme all that tyme. There are also in the *Harythes* and *desertes* of the fyne lande many other kyndes of *Lysartes*, *Dragons*, and other *Dragons*. diuers kyndes of *Serpentes*, whereof I entende not heere to speake muche, because I haue moze particularly entreated of these thynges in my generall historie of the *West Indies*. There are also *Spyders* of maruclous byggenesse, and I *Spyders* haue scene some with the bodye and legges bygger then a mans hande extended euery waye, and I once sawe one of suche byggenesse, that only her bodye was as bygge as a *Sparrowe*, and full of that *Laine* whereof they make theyr webbes: this was of a darke russet coloure, with eyes greater then the eyes of a *Sparrowe*, they are venomous, and of terrible shape to beholde. There are also *Scorpions*, and dyuers other such venomous woymes. Whereby we may see, that where as naturall causes and influence of the planettes are of strongest actiuitie, they cease not to engender and byng forth both good and badde, accordyng to the disposition of the matter, whiche they also doo partly dispose, as the philosphers affyrme. Furthermoze in the fyne lande, there are many *Toades*, beyng very noyous and hurtfull by reason of theyr great multitude, they are not venomous, they are scene in great abundaunce in *Darien*, where they are so bygge that when they dye in the tyme of drought, the bones of some of them (and especialy the rybbes) are of suche greatnesse, that they appeare to be the bones of *Cattes*, or of some other beastes of the same byggenesse. But as the waters diminish, and the moysture consumeth in the tyme of drought (as I haue sayde) they also consume therewith, vntyl the yeere next folowpyng when the rayne and moysture encrease, at whiche tyme they are scene agayne. Neuerthelesse, at this present there is no such quantitie of them, as was wont to be, by reason that as the lande is better cultured by the *Christians*, aswell by the fellpyng of wooddes and shrubbes, as also by the pasture of *Kyne*, *Horses*, and other beastes, so is it apparent that this popson diminisheth daylye, whereby that region becommeth moze holosome and pleasaunt: these *Toades* syng after thre or foure sortes, for some of them syng pleasauntly, other lyke ours of *Spayne*, some also whistle, and other some make an other

Esher maner of noyle: they are lykewyse of diuers coloures, as
 some greene, some russet or gray, and somz almost blacke,
 but of all sortes they are great and fylthy, and noyous by reason
 of theyr great multitude, yet are they not venemous as I haue
 sayde. There are also a strange kynde of Crabbes, whiche
 come forth of certayne holes of the earth, that they them
 selues make: the head and bodie of these make one rounde
 thynge, muche lyke vnto the hood of a Faulkon, hauyng foure
 secte commyng out of the one syde, & as many out of the other:
 they haue also two mouthes, like vnto a payre of small pynners,
 the one bygger then the other, wherewith they byte, but doo
 no great hurt, because they are not venemous: theyr skynne
 and bodie is smooch, and thynne, as is the skynne of a man,
 sayyng that it is somewhat harder, theyr coloure is russet, or
 whyte, or blewe, and walke sydelong, they are very good to be
 eaten, insomuche that the Christians traauylyng by the fynde
 lande, haue been greatly nourysed by them, because they are
 founde in maner euery where: in shape and fourme they are
 muche like vnto the Crabbe whiche we paynt for the signe Can-
 cer, and like vnto those whiche are founde in Spayne in *Anda-
 lusia* in the ryuer *Guadalchiber*, where it entreth into the sea, and
 in the sea coastes there about, sayyng that these are of the water,
 and the other of the lande: they are sometymes hurtfull, so that
 they that eate of them dye, but this chaunceth only when they
 haue eaten any venemous thyng, or of the venemous apples
 wherewith the Canble archers poyson theyr arrowes, whereof
 I wyll speake hereafter, and for this cause the Christians take
 heede how they eate of these Crabbes, yf they fynde them neare
 vnto the sayd apple trees. Furthelmore in these Indies, aswel in
 the fynde lande, as in the *Andes*, there is founde a kynde of
 Serpentes, whiche they call *X. V. anas*, whiche some cal *Iuan-
 nas*, these are terrible and feareful to syght, and yet not hurtful,
 they are very delicate to be eaten, and it is not yet knowen whe-
 ther they be beastes of the lande, or fyshes, because they lyue
 in the water, and wander in the wooddes, and on the lande:
 they haue foure feete, and are commonly bygger then Conies,
 and in some places bygger then Otters, wch sayles lyke *Lp-
 sartes* or *Cutes*: theyr skynne is spotted, and of the same kynd

Crabbes.

Serpentes cal-
led Iuanni.

Byrde of Simothnelle or barenessle, although of dyuers colours: upon the rydge of theyr backes, they haue many long prickes, theyr teeth are very sharpe, and especially theyr fanges or dogge teeth, theyr thyotes are long and large, reachyng from theyr beardes to theyr breastes, of the lyke skynne to the resydue of theyr bodyes: they are dumbe, and haue no voyce, or make any noyse, or crye, although they bee kept tyed to the foote of a cheite, or any other thyng, for the space of .xx. or .xxv. dayes, without any thyng to eate or drynke, except they geue them nowe and then a litle of the bread of *Cazabbi*, or some suche other thyng: they haue foure feete, and theyr fore feete as long as a mans fynger, with clawes lyke the clawes of a byrde, but weaker, and suche as can not grasple or take holde of any thyng: they are muche better to bee eaten then to beholde, for fewe that see them, wyll haue desyre to eate of them, by reason of theyr horrible shape, except suche as haue ben accustomed to the bestes of these regions, whiche are more horrible and feareful, as this is not, but onely in apparence: theyr fleshe is of muche better tast then the fleshe of Connies, and more holosome, for it hurteth none but onely suche as haue had the frenche poxe, insomuche that if they haue been touched of that infirmitie, although they haue ben whole of long tyme, neuerthelesse they feele hurte, and complayne of the eatyng of these *Iuamas*, as hath been often times prooued by experience. There are founde in the fyrrie lande certayne byrdes, so litle, that the whole body of one of them is no bygger then the toppe of the byggest fynger of a mans hande, and yet is the bare body without the feathers not halfe so bygge: This byrde, besyde her litlenesse, is of suche belocitie and swyftnesse in sleeyng, that who so seeth her sleeyng in the ayre, can not see her flap or beate her winges after any other sozt then do the *Doyses*, or humble bees, or *Beetels*: so that there is no man that seeth her flec, that would thynke her to be any other then a *Doire*: they make their nestes accordyng to the propoztion of their bygnes, and I haue seene that one of these byrdes with her nest put in a payre of golde weights, altogether hath waide no more then .2. *Tomini*, which are in poise .24. graines, with the feathers, without the which she shoulde haue wayed somwhat lesse. And doubtlesse when I con-

siter the fynenesse of the clawes & feete of these byzdes, I knowe
 not wherunto I may better lykē them, then to the litle byzdes
 whiche the lynniers of bookes are accustomed to paynte on the
 margent of churche bookes, and other bookes of diuine seruice.
 Theyr feathers are of many sayre colours, as golden, yelow, and
 greene, belyde other variable colours, theyr beake is very
 long for the propotion of theyr bodies, and as fyne and subtile as
 a sawyng neole: they are very hardy, so that when they see a
 man clyme y tree where they haue their nests, they flee at his face,
 & stryke hym in the eyes, commyng, goyng, and returnyng with
 such swyftnes, that no man woulde lyghtly beleene it, that hath
 not seene it: and certaynly these byzdes are so litle, that I durst
 not haue made mention hereof, if it were not that diuers other
 which haue scene them as wel as I can beare witnes of my say-
 ing: they make their nestes of flockes and heare of cotton, wherof
 there is great plentie in these regions, and serueth wel for theyr
 purpose. But as touchyng the byzdes, foules, and beastes of
 these Indies, because they are innumerable, both litle and great,
 I intende not to speake muche heere, because I haue spoken
 moze largely hereof in my generall hystoipe of the Indiae.
 There is an other kynde of beastes scene in the firme lande,
 whiche seemeth very strange and marueylous to the Chyristian
 men to beholde, and much differyng from al other beastes whi-
 che haue ben scene in other partes of the world: these beastes are
 called *Bardati*, and are foure footed, haupyng their tayle and al the
 rest of theyr bodyes covered onely with a skynne lyke the copert-
 ture of a barbed hoise, or the checkered skinne of a Lisarte or Cro-
 codile, of coloure betwene white and russet, inclynyng somwhat
 moze to whyte. This beast is of fourme and shape muche lyke
 to a barbed hoise, with his barbes and flankets in al poynts, and
 from under that which is the barbe and coperture, the taile com-
 meth forth, and the feete in theyr place, the necke also & the eares
 in theyr partes, and in fyne al thynges in lyke soite as in a bar-
 bed courser: they are of the bygnesse of one of these common
 dogges, they are not hurtfull, they are fylthy, and haue theyr
 habitation in certayne hillockes of earth, where dygging with
 their feete, they make theyr dens very deepe, & the hoises thereof,
 in like maner as do Connies, they are very excellent to be eaten, &

are

are taken with nettes, and some also kylled with Crosbowes : they are likewise taken oftentymes when the husbandmen burne the stubble in sowing tyme, or to remove the herbage for Kynne and other beastes. I haue oftentymes eaten of theyr flesh, which seemeth to me of better tast then Kyddes fleshe, and holosome to be eaten. And if these beastes had euer been seene in these partes of the worlde, where the fyrst barbed hozes had theyr originall, no man woulde iudge but that the fourme and fashyon of the co-
 perture of hozes furnyshed for the warres, was fyrst deuised by the syght of these beastes. There is also in the sygne lande another beast, called *Orso Formigaro*, that is, the Ante beare. This beast in heare and coloure, is much lyke to the Beare of Spaine, Beares. and in maner of the same makynge, save that he hath a much longer snout, and is of euill syght : they are oftentymes taken only with staues, without any other weapon, and are not hurtful, they are also taken with dogges, because they are not naturally armed, although they bite somewhat, they are founde for the most part about and neare to the hyllockes where are great abundance of Antes. For in these regions is engendred a certayne kynde of Antes, very litle and blacke, in the feedes and playnes where as growe no trees, where by the instinct of nature these Antes separate them selues to engender farre from the wooddes for feare of these Beares, the which because they are fearefull, vyle, and unarmed (as I haue sayde) they keepe euer in places full of trees, vntyll very famine and necessitie, or the great desire that they haue to feede on these Antes, cause them to come out of the woods to hunt for them : these Antes make a hyllocke of earth to the heygth of a man, or somewhat moxe or lesse, and as hye as a great chest, & sometymes as hye as a Butte or a Hogthead, & as hard as a stone, so that they seeme as though they were stones, set by to limit the endes & confines of certayne lands. Within these hyllocks, made of most harde earth, are innumerable and infinite litle Antes, the whiche may be geathered by bushelles when the hyllocke is broken : the whiche when it is sometymes moysted by rayne, and then dryed agayne by the heate of the Sonne, it breaketh, and hath certayne small ryftes, as litle and subtyle as the edge of a knyfe, and it seemeth that nature hath geuen sense to these Antes to fynde
Antes.
 suche

suche a matter of earth, wherewith they may make the sayde hyllocke of suche hardnesse, that it may seeme a strong pauement made of lyme and stone: and whereas I haue proued and caused some of them to be broken, I haue founde them of such hardnesse, as yf I had not seene I could not haue beleueed, insomuch that they coude scarcely be broken with pykes of Iron, so strong fortresses doo these litle beastes make for theyr sauegard against theyr aduersarie the Beare, who is chiefly nourysed by them, and geuen them as an enimie, accordyng to the common prouerbe whiche sayeth, *Non e alcuna persona si libera, a chimanchi il suo Bargello*, that is, there is no man so free, that hath not his persecutor or priuie enimie. And here when I consyder the maruellous prouidence whiche nature hath geuen to these litle bodics, I cal to remembrance the wittie sentence of Plinie, where speakyng of such litle beastes, he sayeth thus, Why do we maruelle at the Towrebearng shoulders of Elephanes, and not rather where nature hath placed so many senses & such industrie in such litle bodics? There is hearing, smelling, seeing, and feeling, yea, where are the baynes and arteries (without which no beast can lye or moue) in these so litle bodics, whereof some are so small that theyr whole bodics can scarcely be seene of our eyes: What shall we then saye of the partes of the same? Yet euen among these there are many of such sagacitie and industrie, as the like is not seene in beastes of greater quantitie, no noy yet in man, &c. But to returne to the history. This enimie whiche nature hath geuen to these litle beastes, bleseth this maner to assaile them: When he resorteth to the hyllocke where the Antes lie hid as in theyr fortress, he putteth his tongue to one of the ryftes whereof we haue spoken, being as subtile as the edge of a sword, and therewith contynuall lickyng, maketh the place moyst, the some and froth of his mouth beyng of suche p[ro]p[er]tie, that by contynuall lickyng the place, it enlargeth the ryft in such sort by litle and litle, that at the length he easely putteth in his tongue, whiche he hath very long and thynne, and muche disproportionate to his bodie, and when he hath thus made free passage for his tongue into the hyllocke, to put it easely in and out at his pleasure, then he thrusteth it into the hole as farre as he can reache, and so letteth it rest a good space, butyll a great quantitie

stie of the Antes (whose nature reioyrceth in heate and moyster) haue laden his tongue, and as many as he can contepne in the holownesse thereof, at which tyme hee sodely draweth it into his mouth, and eateth them, and returneth agayne to the same practise immediatly, buttill he haue eaten as many as him lysteth, or as long as he can reache any with his tongue. The fleshe of this beast, is filthy and vnlaury, but by reason of the extreme thystles and necessitie that the Christian men were put to at theyr fyrst commynge into these partes, they were enforced to proue all thinges, and so fell to the eatyng of these beastes: but when they had found more delycate meates, they fel into hatred with this. These Antes haue thappearance of the place of theyr entraunce into the hyllocke, vnder the grounde, and this at so litle a hole, that it coulde hardely be founde, if certayne of them were not scene to passe in and out: but by this way the Beares could haue no suche power to hurte them as aboue at the layde ryftes, as I haue sayde. There is an other strange beast, whiche by a name of contrary effecte, the Spanyardes call *Cagnuolo leggiero*, that is, the lyght dogge, whereas it is one of the slowest beastes in the world, and so heauy and dull in mouyng, that it can scarcely goe syfte pases in a whole day: these beastes are in the firme lande, and are very strange to beholde for the disproportion that they haue to all other beastes, they are about two spannes in length when they are growne to theyr full byggenesse, but when they are very young, they are somewhat more grosse then long: they haue foure subtile feete, and in euery of them foure claws lyke vnto byrdes, and ioyned togather, yet are nother theyr claws or their feete able to susteyne theyr bodies from the grounde, by reason whercof, and by the heauynesse of theyr bodies, they drawe theyr bellies on the grounde: theyr neckes are hygh and streyght, and all equall lyke the pestle of a mortar, which is aktogether equall euen vnto the toppe, without makyng any proportion or similitude of a head, or any dyfference except in the noddle, and in the toppes of theyr neckes: they haue very rounde faces muche lyke vnto Owles, and haue a marke of theyr owne heare after the maner of a cyrcle, which maketh theyr faces seeme somewhat more long then large: they haue small eyes and rounde, and nostrylles lyke vnto Spankers:

A strange
 beast which
 seemeth a kind
 of Canleon.

Dd.i.

they

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

they haue litle mouthes, and moue theyr neckes from one syde to an other, as though they were assoupled: theyr chiefe desyre and delyghte is to cleaue and sticke fast vnto trees, or some other thyng whereby they may clyme aloft, and therefore for the most parte, these beastes are founde bypon trees, wherevnto cleauyng fast, they mount by by litle and litle, staying them selues by theyr long clawes: the colour of theyr beare, is betwene russet and whyte, and of the proper colour of the beare of a Weasel: they haue no tayles, and theyr voyce is much differing from other beastes, for they syng onely in the nyght, and that continually from tyme to tyme, syngyng euer syxe notes one hygher then an other, so fallyng with the same, that the first note is the hyghest, and the other in a baser tune, as if a man shoulde say *La, sol, fa, mi, re, vt*, so this beast sayeth, *Ha, ba, ba, ba, ba, ba*. And doubtlesse, it seemeth vnto mee, that as I haue sayde in the Chapter of the beast called *Bardati*, that those beastes myght bee the original and document to imbarbe hoyses: euen so, the fyrst inuention of musycke myght seeme by the hearyng of this beast, to haue the fyrst principles of that science, rather then by any other thyng in the worlde. But now to returne to the hystorie. I say that in a shorthe space after this beast hath song, and hath paused a whyle, shee returneth agayne to the selfe same song, and doeth this onely in the nyght, and not in the day: By reason whereof, and also because of her euyl sight, I thynke her to bee a nyght beast; and the friende of darkenesse. Sometymes the Christian men fynde these beastes, and byyng them home to theyr houses, where also they creepe all about with theyr naturall slownesse, insonmuch that nocher for theatnyng or pryckyng they will moue any faster then theyr naturall and accustomed pace. And if they fynde any trees, they creepe thither immediatly, and mount to the toppe of the hyghest bjaunche thereof, where they remaine continually for the space of eyght, or tenne, or twentie dayes, without eatyng of any thyng, as farre as any man can iudge. And whereas I my selfe haue kept them in my house, I coulde neuer percepue other but that they lyue onely of apple, and of the same opinion are in maner all men of those regions, because they haue neuer seene them eate any thyng, but euer turue theyr heades and mouthes towards that

that parte where the wynde bloweth most, whereby may be considered that they take most pleasure in the ayre. They byte not, nor yet can byte, hauing very litle mouthes: they are not venomous or noyous any way, but altogether brutyshe, and bitterly vnyprofitable, and without commoditie yet knowne to men, sayng onely to moue theyr myndes to contemplate the infinite power of God, who delygtheth in the varietie of creatures, whereby appeareth the power of his incomprehensible wysedome and maiestie, so farre to exceede the capacitie of mans vnderstanding. In these regions there are lykewyse founde certayne foules or byrdes, which the Indians call *Alcatraz*: these are muche bigger then Geese, the greatest parte of theyr feathers are of russet colour, and in some partes pelowe, theyr bylles or beakes are of two spannes in length, and very large neare to the head, and growyng small towards the poynte, they haue great and large thyotes, and are muche lyke to a foule which I sawe in Flaunders in *Busselles* in your maiesties pällace, whiche the Flemynges call *Haina*: And I remember that when your maiestie dnyed one day in your great hall, there was brought to your maiesties presence a Cauderne of water with certayne fishes alyue, whiche the sayde foule dyd eate by whole, and I thynke veryly that that foule was a foule of the sea, because shee had feete lyke foules of the water, as haue also these *Alcatrazi*, which are lykewyse foules of the sea, and of suche greatnesse, that I haue seene a whole coate of a man put into the throates of one of them in *Panama*, in the yeere. 1521. And forasmuche as in that coast of *Panama*, there passeth and fleeth a great multitude of these *Alcatrazi*, beyng a thyng very notable, I wyll declare the maner heereof, as not onely I, but also dyuers other nowre present in your maiesties courte haue often tymes seene. Your maiestie shall therefore vnderstande, that in this place (as I haue sayde before) the sea of *Sur* rylseth and falleth two leagues and moze froin syxe houres to syxe houres: so that when it increaseth, the water of the sea arryueith so neare to the houses of *Panama*, as doeth our sea (called *Mare Mediterraneum*) in *Barzalona*, or in *Naples*: and when the sayd increasing of the sea commeth, there commeth also therewith suche a multitude of the smal fishes called *Sardines*, that it is so marueilous a thyng to

Foules, and byrdes.

*Alcatraz**Panama*,

Do, ii.

behold,

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

403

beholde, that no man would beleue it that hath not seene it. In
 so much that the *Cacique* (that is) the kyng of that lande, at such
 tyme as I dwelt there, was bounde dayly, as he was commaun-
 ded by your maiesties gouernour, to byng ordinarily three ca-
 noas or barkes full of the sayde *Sardynes*, and to vnlade the
 same in the market place, whiche were afterwarde by the ru-
 ler of the citie diuided among the Christian men, without any
 coste or charge to any of them : Insomuche that if the people
 had been a much greater multitude then they were, and as ma-
 ny as are at this present in *Toledo*, or more, and had none other
 thyng to lyue by, they myght haue been sufficiently susteyned
 by these *Sardynes*, beyde the ouerplus whiche should haue re-
 mayned . But to returne to the foules, whereof we haue spo-
 ken . As the sea commeth, and the *Sardynes* with the same,
 euen so lykewyse come the sayde *Alcatrazzi* therewith, and flee
 continually ouer it, in such a multytude, that they appeare to co-
 uer the vpper parte or flooze of the water, and thus continue in
 mountyng and fallyng from the ayre to the water, and from the
 water to the ayre, duryng all the tyme of their fishing: and alsoone
 as they haue taken any of these *Sardines*, they flee about the wa-
 ters, and eate them incontynently, and sodenly returne agayne
 to the water for more, continuing thus course by course without
 ceaslyng: in lyke maner when the sea falleth, they folowe theyr fy-
 shyng as I haue sayde . There goeth also in the company of these
 foules, an other kynde of foules, called *Coda inforcata*, (that is)
 the forked taylor, whereof I haue made mention before, & alsoone
 as the *Alcatraz* mouereth from the water with her pray of the
Sardynes, sodenly this *Coda inforcata* gyueth her so many
 strokes, and so persecuteth her, that shee causeth her to let fall the
Sardynes whiche shee hath in her mouth : the whiche alsoone as
 they are falne, and before they yet touche the water, the *Coda*
inforcata catcheth them euen in the fall, in suche sorte, that it is
 a great pleasure to beholde the combat betweene them all the
 day long . The number of these *Alcatrazzi* is suche, that the
 Christian men are accustomed to sende to certayne Ilandes and
 rockes which are neare about *Panama*, with theyr boates or bar-
 kes to take these *Alcatrazzi*, whyle they are yet young, and can
 not flee, and kyll as many of them with stanes as they will, buttill
 they

they haue therewith laden theyr Barkes or Canoas: these young ones are so fat and well fedde, that they can not bee eaten, and are taken for none other intent, but onely to make grease for candles to burne in the nyght, for the whiche purpose it serueth very well, and gyueth a cleare lyght, and burneth easly. After this maner, and for this purpose, innumerable of them are kyld: & yet it seemeth that the number of them that fythe for Sardynes doe dayly increase. There are other foules called *Passere sem-
pie.* that is, simple sparowes: these are somewhat lesse then Seawewes, and haue theyr feete lyke vnto great Halardes, and stande in the water sometymes, and when the Shyppes sayle fyfte or a hundred leagues about the Ilandes, these foules beholdyng the Shyppes comyng towarde them, breake theyr flight, and fall downe vpon the sayle yardes, mastes, and cables thereof, and are so simple and folysh, that they tary vntyll they may easly bee taken with mens handes, and were therfore called of the maryners simple sparowes: they are blacke, and vpon theyr blacke, haue theyr head and shoulders of feathers of a darke russet colour: they are not good to bee eaten, although the maryners haue sometymes been inforced to eate them. There is an other kynde of byrdes in the firme land, which the Christians call *Picuti.* because they haue very great beakes, in respecte of the lidenesse of theyr bodyes, for theyr beakes are very heauy, and waye more then theyr whole bodyes besyde: these byrdes are no bygger then Quayles, but haue a muche greater bulshement of feathers, insomuche that theyr feathers are more then theyr bodyes: theyr feathers are very sayre, and of many variable coloures, theyr beakes are a quarter of a yarde in length or more, and bendyng downe toward the earth, and three fyngers brode neare vnto the head: theyr tongues are very quylls, wherewith they make a great hysyng: they make holes in trees with theyr beakes, in the which they make their nestes. And surely these byrdes are marueylous to beholde, for the great dyfference whiche they haue from all other byrdes that I haue secne, as well for theyr tongues (which are quylls as I haue sayd) as also for the strangenesse of their sight, & disproportion of their great beakes, in respect of the rest of their bodies. There are no byrdes found that prouide better for the safegard of

Do.iii.

their

Lden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

they young in the tyme of they breeding, to be without daunger of wyld cattles, that they enter not into they nestes to destroy their egges or young, and this as well by the strange maner of buyldyng their nestes, as also by they owne defence: and therefore when they perceyue that the cattles appoche towarde them, they enter into they nestes, and holdyng they beakes towarde the entraunce of the same, stande at they defence, and so bere the cattles, that they cause them to leaue their enterpyse. There are also other byrdes or sparowes, which the Christians by contrary effecte call *Matti*, that is fooles: Whereas neuertheless there is no byrde that sheweth moze wyt and crafte in defendyng her young from pryel. These byrdes are litle, & in maner blacke, and somewhat bygger then our *Thushes*, they haue certayne whyte feathers in they neckes, and the lyke sagacitie or sharpenesse of sense as haue the byrdes or *Pyes* called *Gazzuole*, they sildometymes lyght vppon the earth: they make they nestes in trees separated from other, because the wyld cattles (called *Mammoni*) are accustomed to leape from tree to tree, not descendyng to the grounde for feare of other beastes, except when they are enforced by thirst to come downe to drinke, at such times as they are sure not to bee molested, and for this cause doe not these byrdes make they nestes but in trees farre diuided from other, they make them of a cubite in length, or moze, after the maner of bagges or litle sakes, large at the boitome, and growyng narrower and narrower towarde the mouth, whereby they are fastened, hauyng the hole wherewith they enter into the sake, of suche byggenesse as may onely suffyce to receyue them. And to the ende that the cattles may not deuour they young, if they chaunce to moue vppon the trees where they haue they nestes, they vse an other craft, which is, to make they nestes in thicke braunches of trees, and to defende the same with sharpe and strong thornes, implicate and set in suche order, that no man is able to make the lyke, so that the cattles can by no meanes put they legges into the hole of the neste to take out the young byrdes, as well for the sharpenesse of the thornes, as also for the depth of the nestes, in the bottome wherof, the young birds rest without daunger of their enemie: for some of they nestes beyng

folpthe sparrowes.

three or foure spannes in length, the legge of the cattē can not
 reache to the bottome thereof. They vse also an other policie,
 which is, to make many of theyr nestes in one tree, the which
 they doe for one of these two causes: that is, that epyther of theyr
 owne naturall disposition they are accustomed to goe in great
 multitudes, and reioyce in the company of theyr owne generati-
 on, as doe the byrdes whiche wee call *Stares*, or els to the in-
 tent that if it should so chaunce that the cattles shoulde clyme the
 trees where they make theyr nestes, they myght bee a greater
 company to resyst and molest the cattles, at w^hose appoche they
 make a fearefull and terrible crye, whereby the cattles are put to
 flight. Furthermoze, in the s^hyme lande, and in the *Flandes*, there
 are certayne byrdes called *Piche*, or *Gazzuole*, somewhat lyke *Cazzuole*.
 vnto those which we call *Woodwalles*, or *Woodpeckes*, beyng
 lesse then ours of *Spayne*: these are altogether blacke, and goe
 hopping and leapping, theyr beakes are also blacke, and of the
 same fashion as are the *Hoopingtrays* beakes, they haue long tay-
 les, and are somewhat bygger then *Stares*. There are other
 byrdes called *Pintadelli*, which are lyke vnto certayne greene byr-
 des, which the *Italpans* call *Fringuelli*, and are of seuen colours:
 these byrdes for feare of the cattles, are euer wont to make
 theyr nestes ouer the bankes of ryuers, or the sea, where the
 braunches of trees so reache ouer the water that with a litle
 weyght they may bowe downe to the water: theyr nestes
 are made so neare the toppes of the braunches, that when the
 cattles come thereon, the braunches bende towarde the water,
 and the cattles turne backe agayne for feare of fallyng: For al-
 though no beast in the worlde bee moze malicious then this,
 yet whereas the most parte of beastes are naturally inclined to
 swymme, this catte hath no maner of aptensse therevnto, and
 is therefore soone drowned or strangled in the water, and by a
 p^riuie sense of nature feareth the danger which he can not escape.
 These byrdes make their nestes in such sort, that although they
 be wette and filled with water, yet doe they so sodeynly ryle by a-
 gayne, that the young byrdes are not thereby hurt or drowned.
 There are also many *Nyghtyngales*, and other byrdes which
 syng maruylouslye with great melodie and dyfference in
 syng.

Dd.iiii.

syng.

Spynnyng: these byrdes are of marvellous dyuers colours the one from the other, some are altogether pecke, and some other of so excellent, delectable, and hygh a colour, as it were a Ruby, other are also of dyuers and variable colours, some of fere colours, and other some all of one colour, beyng all so saye and beautifull, that in byghtnesse and spynnyng they excell all that are seene in Spayne, or Italy, or other prouinces of Europe: Many of these are taken with nettes, lyne twygges, and spynnynges of dyuers soptes. Dyuers other soptes of great foules lyke vnto Eagles, and suche other as lyue of pray, are founde in the firme lande, of suche diuersitie, that it is in maner impossible to describe them all particularly: and forasmuche as I haue more largely increased hereof in my generall bystorie of the Indies, I thynke it not requysite heere to make anye further mention of the same.

great foules.

Of trees, fruites, and plantes.



Cocus.

Here is both in the firme lande and the Ilands, a certayne tree called *Cocus*, beyng a kynde of Date trees, & hauyng their leaues of the selfe same greatnesse as haue the date trees which beare dates, but dyffer much in their growing, for the leaues of this *Cocus* growe out of the trunkes of the tree, as doe the fingers out of the hand, wreathing them selues one within an other, & so spreading abroad: these trees are hygh, & are founde in great plentie in the coast of the sea of *Sur*, in the prouince of *Cachique Chimau*. These date trees bying shortly a fruite after this sorte: being altogether vntie as it groweth on the tree, it is of greater circumference then the head of a man, & from the superficial part to the middell, which is the fruite, it is inuolued & covered with many webbs much lyke vnto those birds of towe which they vse in *Andalusia*. Of this towe or web, the East Indians make a certayne kynd of cloth, of three or foure soptes, and cordes for the sayles of shippes: but in these Indies of your maiestie, they passe not for these cordes, or this cloth that may be made of the fruite of *Cocus*, by reason of the great plentie that they haue of the bombage

of cotion of the gallsampine trees. The fruite which is in the myddest of the sayde towne, is (as I haue sayde) as bygge as a mans fytt, and sometymes thyle as bygge, and more: It is in foure lyke unto a walnutte, or some other rounde thyng, somewhat more long then large, and very harde, the rynde of herke heretof, is as thicke as the cyrcle of letters of a ryall of plate, and within, there cleaweth fast to the rynde of the nutte a carnositie or substance of coornel, of the thycheness of halfe a synger, or of the least synger of the hande, and is very wyper, lyke unto a saye Almonde, and of better taste and more pleasant. When this fruite is chetwed, there remaine certayne crummes, as do the lyke of Almondos: Per if it be swallowed downe, it is not vnplesant. For although that after the iuice or moysture be gone downe the throte before the said crummes be swallowed, the rest whiche is eaten, seeme somewhat sharpe or sower, yet doth it not so greatly offende þe tast, as to be cast away. Whyle this *Cocus* is yet freshe and newly taken from the tree, they vse not to eat of the said carnositie & fruite, but fyrt beating it very muche, and then strapyng it, they drawe a mylke thereof, much better and sweeter then is the mylke of beastes, and of much substance, the whiche the Chyistian men of thos regions put in the toptes of cakes which they make of the graine of *Mazium* wherof they make theyr bread, or in other bread as we put bread in porrage: so that by reason of the sayde mylke of *Cocus*, the toptes are more excellent to be eaten without offence to the stomake: they are so pleasant to the taste, and leave it aswell satisfied as though it had been delcyed with many delycate vydes. But to procede further, your maiestie shal vnderstande, that in the place of the stone or coornell, there is in the myddest of the sayde carnositie a voyde place, which neuerthelesse is full of a most cleare and excellent water, in suche quantitie as may fill a great egge shell, or more, or lesse, accordyng to the byggenesse of the *Cocus*, the whiche water surtyng, is the most substantiall, excellent, and precious to be drunke, that may be founde in the world: insomuch that in the moment when it passeth the palate of the mouth, and begynneth to go downe the throte, it seemeth that from the sole of the foote, to the crowne of the head, there is no parte of the bodye but that feelth greuous

I haue seene
one of these
fruits opened,
the whiche
when it was
whole, if it
were shaken
the water was
harde as
therein as it
were in a bo-
tle, but in tyme
it consumed
and was vany-
shed by conge-
ling in
to a fat substance.

confort

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

consyste thereby : as it is doubtlesse one of the most excellent
 thynges that may be tasted vppon the earth, and suche as I
 am not able by wytyng or tongue to expresse . And to pro-
 ceede yet further, I say that when the meate of this fruite is
 taken from the vessell thereof, the vessell remaineth as sayre
 and meate as though it were pulpybed, and is without of co-
 lour inclynng towarde blacke, and thyneth or glysereth very
 sayre, and is within of no lesse delicatenesse . Suche as haue
 accustomed to dlynke in these vesselles, and haue been troubled
 with the disease called the frettyng of the guttes, say that they
 haue by experience founde it a marueylous remedie agaynst that
 disease, and that it breaketh the stone, and prouoketh brine.
 This fruite was called *Cocus*, for this cause, that when it is taken
 from the place where it cleaueth fast to the tree, there are seene
 two holes, and aboue them two other natural holes, whiche alto-
 gether do represent the gesture and figure of the cattes called
Mammoni, that is, *Spunkeys*, when they crye, which crye the
 Indians call *Coca*, but in very deepe, this tree is a kinde of Date
 trees, and hath the same effecte to heale frettyng of the guttes,
 that *Plinie* describeth all kynnds of Date trees to haue . There
 are furthermoze in the firme lande, trees of suche byggenesse
 that I dare not speake therof, but in place where I haue so ma-
 ny wytnesses whiche haue seene the same as well as I . I saye
 therefore, that a league from *Dariena* or the citie of *Santa Maria*
Antiqua, there passeth a rpuer very large and deepe, which is cal-
 led *Curi*, ouer the which the Indians had layde a great tree, so
 trauesing the same, that it was in the steepe of a byidge, the whi-
 che I my selfe with vpuers other that are at this present in your
 maiesties court, haue oftentimes passed ouer . And so forasmu-
 che as the said tree had line long there, and by þ great weyght therof
 was so thynke downeuarde, and partly covered with water,
 that none coulde passe ouer it, but were wette to the knee, I
 beyng then in the yere . 1522. the official or Justice in that citie
 at your maiesties appoyntment, caused an other great tree to be
 layde in that place, whiche in lyke maner trauesed the rpuer,
 and reached more then fyfthe score ouer the further syde : This
 tree was exceeding great, and rested aboue the water more
 then two cubites, in the fall, it cast downe all such other trees as
 were

Great trees.

were within the reach thereof, and discovered certayne bynes, whiche were so laden with blache grapes of pleasaunt taste, that they satysfied more then fyfey persons whiche ate theyr fyl thereof. This tree in the thychest part thereof, was more then fyfeyne spannes thicke, and was neuerthelesse but litle in respect of many other trees whiche are founde in this prouince. For the Indians of the coaste and prouince of *Cartagenia*, make barkes or boates thereof (which they call *Canoas*.) of suche byggennesse, being all one whole tree, that some conteyne a hundred men, some a hundred and thirtie, and some more, haryng neuerthelesse such wyde space within the same, that there is left sufficient roome to passe to and fro throughout all the *Canoas*. Some of these are so large, besyde the length, that they conteyne more then ten or twelue spannes in breadth, and sayle with two sayles, as with the maister sayle and the tryncket, which they make of very good cotton. The greatest trees that I haue seene in these partes, or in any other regions, was in the prouince of *Guaturo*, the kynge wherof rebellyng from the obedience of your maiestie, was pursued by me, and taken prisoner: at whiche tyme I with myr companie, passed ouer a very hygh mountayne, full of great trees, in the top wherof, we founde one tree, whiche had three rootes, or rather diuisions of the roote aboute the earth, in forme of a tryangle, or treuct, so that betweene euery foote of this tryangle or thre seete, there was a space of twentie foote betweene euery foote, and this of such heygth aboute the earth, that a laden Cart of those wherewith they are accustomed to byng home come in the tyme of harness in the kyngdome of *Toledo* in *Spainne*, myght easly haue passed through euery of those partitions or wyndowes whiche were betweene the thre seete of the sayd tree. From the earth upwarde to the trunk of the tree, the open places of the diuisions betweene these thre seete, were of suche heygth from the ground, that a footeman with a *Janekin* was not able to reache the place where the sayde seete toynd together in the trunk or bodie of the tree, whiche grew of great heygth in one peece, and one whole bodie, or euer it spread in banches, whiche it did not before it exceeded in heygth the *Coloysse of Sainct Romane* in the cite of *Toledo*: from whiche heygth and upward, it spread very great and strong banches.

A marueylous tree.

Among

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Among certayne Spaniards whiche climed this tree, I my selfe was one, and when I was ascended to the place where it begonne to spreade the bryanches, it was a maruelous thynge to beholde a great countrey of suche trees towarde the prouince of Abayme. This tree was easy to clyme, by reason of certayne *Besuchi*, (whereof I haue spoken befoze) which grew wreathed about the tree, in suche sort that they seemed to make a scalyng Ladder. Euery of the forsayd thre feete whiche boze the bodie of the tree, was twentie spannes in thickenesse, and where they ioyned all together aboute the Trunke or bodie of the tree, the principall Trunke was moze then fourtie and syue spannes in circuite. I named the mountayne where these trees growe, the mountayne of thre footed trees. And this whiche I haue now declared, was srene of all the companie that was there with me when (as I haue sayde befoze) I tooke kyng *Gnaturo* prysoner in the peere. 1522. Many thynge moze myght beere be spoken as touching this matter, as also howe there are many other excellent trees founde of diuers sortes and dyfference, as Sweete Cedar trees, blacke Date trees, and many other, of the whiche some are so heaupe that they cannot floote aboute the water, but syncke immediatly to the bottoome, and other agayne as lycht as a Cozke. As touchyng all which thynge I haue wrytten moze largely in my generall historie of the Indies. And forasmuche as at this present I haue entred to entreat of trees, befoze I passe any further to other thynge, I wyll declare the maner howe the Indians kinde fyre, only with wood and without fire, the maner wherof is this. They take a peece of wood, of two spannes in length, as bygge as the least fynger of a mans hand, or as an arrowe well pullyshed, and of a strong kynde of wood which they keepe only for this purpose: and where they entend to kyndle any fire, they take two other peeces of wood, of the dyest and lychtest that they can fynde, and bynde them fast together one with an other, as close as two fyngers ioyned: in the myddest or betweene these, they put the popnt of the fyrst litle staffe made of harde and strong woodde, whiche they hold in theyr handes by the toppe thereof, and turne or rubbe it rounde aboute contynually in one place betweene the two peeces of woodde which lye bounde together vpon the earth, whiche

Scalyng of
tree without
fyre.

whiche by that incessant rubbing and chafing, are in thoste
 spere kyndes, and take fyre. I haue also thought good
 here to speake somewhat of suche thynges as come to my re-
 membrance of certayne trees whiche are founde in this lande,
 and sometime also the lyke haue been seene in Spayne.
 These are certayne putrified trunks, whiche haue laye so
 long rottyng on the earth, that they are very whyte, and shyne
 in the nyght lyke burning fyrebrandes, and when the Spa-
 nyardes fynde any of this woodde, and intende mainly in the
 nyght to make warre and invade any prouince, when call
 so requyret that it shalbe necessary to goe in the nyght, in
 such places where they knowe not the way, the foremost Chri-
 stian man whiche gydeth the way, associate with an Indian
 to directe hym therein, taketh a litle starre of the sayde woodde,
 whiche he putteth in his cappe, hangyng behynde on his shoul-
 ders, by the lycht whereof he that foloweth next to hym, direc-
 teth his iourney, who also in lyke maner beareth an other starre
 behynde hym, by the shynyng whereof the thyrde foloweth the
 same way, and in lyke maner do al the rest, so that by this
 meanes none are losse or stragle out of the way. And sozasmuch
 as this lycht is not seene very farre, it is the better policie for
 the Christians, because they are not thereby disclosed before they
 invade theyr enemies. Furthermoze as touchyng the natures
 of trees, one particuler thyng seemeth woorthy to be noted,
 whereof Plinie maketh mention in his naturall hystorpe, where
 he sayth that there are certayne trees whiche conynue euer
 greene, and neuer lose theyr leaues, as the Bay tree, the
 Cedar, the Orange tree, & the Olive tree, with such other, of the
 whiche in altogether i.e. nameth not poss fyre or fyre. To this
 purpose, I say, that in the Landes of these Indies, and also
 in the same lande, it is a thyng of muche difficultie to fynde
 two trees that lose or cast theyr leaues at any tyme: For al-
 though I haue diligently searched to knowe the truth hereof,
 yet haue I not seene any that lose theyr leaues, eyther of
 them whiche we haue brought out of Spayne into these regi-
 ons, as Orange trees, Limons, Cedars, Palmes, or Date
 trees, and Pomegranate trees, or of any other in these regions,
 except onely *Cassia*, whiche loseth his leaues, and hath a greater
 thyng

Putrified
 woodde shyn-
 yng in the
 nyght.

Plinie.

Trees whiche
 conynue euer
 greene.

Cassia.

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

thyng appropriate to it selfe onely: whiche is, that whereas all
 other trees and plantes of India spreade they roots no deeper
 in the earth then the depth of a mans heighe, or somewhat
 more, not descending any further into the ground, by reason
 of the great heate whiche is founde beneath that depth, per
 dooth *Cassia* peache further into the ground, vntill it fynd water
 whiche by the Philosophers opinion shoulde be the cause of a
 thyme and watery radicall moysture to suche thynges as watre
 they nourishment thereof, as fat and vinctuous groundes with
 temperate heate, yelde a salt and firme moysture to suche
 thynges as growe in them, whiche is the cause that suche trees
 lose not they leaues, as the sayde thyme and watery moys-
 ture is cause of the contrarie, as appeareth by the sayde ef-
 fecte whiche is seene onely in *Cassia*, and none other tree or plant
 in all these parties.

All secret
 thyng.

Whate all
 mystryes.

Of Reedes or Canes.



I haue not thought it comenient in the cha-
 pitule before, to speake of that wherof I in-
 tend nowe to intreate, of reedes or canes, to
 thintent that I woulde not myngle them
 with plantes or trees, being thynges of them
 selues woorthy to be particularly obserued.
 So it is therfore, that in the firme land there
 are many sortes of reedes, so that in many places they make their
 houses thereof, couerynge them with the toppes of the same, and
 making they walles of them in lyke maner, as I haue sayde be-
 fore: and among these kyndes of reedes, there is one so great,
 that the canes therof are as bigge as a mans legge in þ knee, and
 three spannes in length from loput to loput, or more, insomuch that
 euery of them is of capacitie to contayne a litle bucket of water.
 In this kynde, there are founde some greater, and some lesse, of
 the whiche some they vse to make quyers for arrowes. There
 is founde an other kynde, whiche surely is maruyllous, beyng
 litle bygger then a *Naueyn*, the canes wherof are longer then
 two spannes: these reedes growe one farrre from an other, as
 some tymes twentie or thirtie paces, and sometymes also two
 or thre leagues: they growe in maner in all prouinces in the
 Indies,

Lden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

holes, and growe nere to very hygh trees, wherunto they
 leane, and creepe up to the toppes of they branches, whiche
 they imbryse, and descende agayne downe to the earth. They
 canes are full of most cleare water, without any manner of taste
 or savour, eyther of the canes, or of any other thing. and suche
 as yf it were taken out of the freshest spring in the world, nor
 yet is it knowen that ever it hurt any that drinke thereof. For it
 hath oftentimes so chaunced, that as the Christian men have tra-
 vailed in these regions in desolate wastes, where for lacke of wa-
 ter they have been in great danger to die for thirst, they have es-
 caped that perill by reason that they founde the sayd reedes, of the
 water of whose canes they have drinke a great quantitie, with-
 out any hurt thereof ensuing. Therefore when they fynde these
 in any place, they make water vessels of the canes thereof, and
 carry as many of them full of water as may suffice for one dayes
 journey: and sometime they carry so many, that they take for every
 man two or three quartes of water, which may serue them for
 many dayes, because it doth not corrupt, but remaineth still
 fresh and good.

There are also certayne plantes, whiche the Christians call
Platani. These are as hygh as trees, and become as byg in the
 trunk as the knee of a man, or more. From the foote to the
 toppe, they beare certayne long and large leaves, being more
 then three spannes in largenesse, & about ten or twelue in length:
 the whiche when they are broken of the wynde, the stalke remaineth
 whole in the myddell. In the myddell of this plant, in the
 highest part thereof, there groweth a cluster with fourtie or fyftie
 platans about it, every of them being a spanne and a halfe in
 length, and as byg as a mans arme in the small, or more, or lesse,
 accordyng to the goodnesse of the soyle where they growe: they
 have a rynde not very thicke, and easie to be broken, being
 within altogether full of a substance lyke unto the mary of the
 bone of an Oxe, as it appeareth when yf rynde or hache is taken
 from the same. This cluster ought to be taken from the plant,
 when any one of the platans begin to appeare yellowe, at which
 tyme they take it, and hang it in they houses, where all the
 cluster waxeth drye, with all his platans. This cluster is a
 very good stuche, and when it is spent, and the rynde taken
 off.

Platani.

Fragis.

of, there are founde within it many good type **Fragges**, whiche beinge colled, or stirred in an **Quod**, in a close pot, or some suche other thing, are of pleasaunt tast, much lyke to the consuetude of **Quod**: they putrifie not on the sea so soone as some other frutes do, but conserue sytterne dayes and more, if they be gathered somewhat greene: they seeme more delicate on the sea then on the land, not for that they any thinge encrease in goodnesse on the sea, but because that whereas on the land other chynges are lacking, whereof is plentie on the land, those meates seeme of best tast, whiche facillie present necessitie. This trunche of **lyng** whiche byngedth sooth the sayd cluster, is a whole peere in groweing and bynging sooth frutes, in which tyme it hath put sooth rounde about it ten or twelue **lyngges**, as bygge as the hylt of principall, and multiplieth no lesse then the principall in bynging sooth of clusters, with frutes lykewise at theyr tyme, and also in bynging sooth other and many **lyngges**, as is sayde before. From the whiche **lyngges** or trunches, as soone as the cluster of the fruite is taken away, the plant begyntheth to drye and wyther, whiche then they take out of the grounde, because it doth none other then occupie it in daynt, and without moyste. They are so many, and do so marueylously encrease and multiplie, that it is a thyng in maner encreddible. They are exceeding moyst, insomuch that when they are plucked up from the place where they grow, there issueth sooth a great quantitie of water, aswel out of the plant, as out of the place where it grewe, in suche sort, that al the moysture of the earth surr about, myght seeme to be gathered together about the trunche or blocke of the sayd plant, with the frutes whereof, the **Antes** are so farre in lowe, that they are seene in great multitudes in the branches of the plantes: so that for the multitude thereof, it sometyme so chaunceth, that men are enforced to take away the plantes from theyr possession: these frutes are founde at all tymes of the peere. There is also an other kinde of wilde plants that groweth in the feedes, whiche I haue not seene but in the **Islande of Hispaniola**, although they be founde in other Mandes of the **Indies**: these they call **Tunas**. They growe of a Chille full of daynes, and byng sooth a feruie muche lyke unto great **Fragges**, whiche haue a cyture: lyke **Spogers**, and are within

Tunas.

with in of a hygh colour, with graynes and the rynde lyke vnto a
 fygge: they are of good taste, and grow abundantly in the fieldes
 in many places: They worke a strange effecte in suche as eate
 them, for if a man eate two, or thre, or more, they cause his vyne
 to bee of the very colour of blood, which thynge chaunced once to
 my selfe. For on a tyme as I made water, and sawe the colour
 of my vyne, I entred into a great insption of my lyfe, being so
 astonysed for feare, that I thought the same had chaunced to
 mee vpon some other cause, insomuche that surely my imagina-
 tion myght haue done mee hurte, but that they which were with
 mee vnd comforte mee immediatly, declaring the cause thereof,
 as they knew by experience, being auncient inhabitours in those
 regions. There groweth also an other plant, which the people
 of the countrey call *Bibaos*: this putteth forth certayne stright
 branches, and very brode leaues, which the Indians vse for dy-
 uers purposes: For in some places they couer theyr houses with
 the leaues thereof, couched and layde after the maner of chetche,
 wherunto it serueth very well: Sometymes also when it ray-
 neth, they cast these ouer theyr heades, to defende them from the
 water. They make also certayne chestes, which they call *Hamas*,
 weaued after a strange softe, and interpret with the leaues
 of this *Bibaos*. These chestes are wrought in such softe, that al-
 though it rayne vpon them, or they chaunce to fall into the water,
 yet are not suche thinges wet as are within them: they are made
 of the branches of the sayde *Bibaos*, with the leaues weaued to-
 geather therewith: In these they keepe salte, and other subtile
 thinges. They vse them also for an other purpose, which is this:
 that fyndyng them in the fieldes at such tyme as they haue scarfe-
 nesse of vittayles, they dyg by the rootes of these plantes while
 they are yet young, or eate the plant it selfe, in that parte where
 it is most tender, which is from a foote vnder the grounde, where
 it is as tender and whyte as a reede or bulrush. And forasmuche
 as wee are nowe come to the ende of this narration, it cometh
 to my remembraunce to make mention of an other thynge, which
 is not farre from my purpose: and this is, howe the Indians
 doe stayne or dye cloath of bombage cotton, or any other thynge
 whiche they intende to dye, of diuers colours, as blache, tawny,
 greene, blew, yelowe, and redde, which they doe with the barkes,

*Bibaos.**Hamas.*Dying of cot-
ton.

C. l.

or

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

A strange
dyng.

of ryndes, and leaues of certayne trees, which they know by experience to be good for this practise: and by this arte they make colours in suche perfection and excellencie, that no better can be deuysed. But this seemeth a strange thynge, that they doe all this in one lesse same vessel: So that when they haue caused the sayde ryndes and leaues to boyle together, they make in the same vessel without any chaunge (as I haue sayde) as many colours as them lysteth: Whiche thing I suppose to come to passe, by the disposition of the colour which they haue first giuen to the thynge that they intende to dye or colour, whether it be threed, webbe, or cloth, or any thing that they intende to colour.

Of venomous Apples, wherewith they
poyson theyr arrowes.



The Apples wherewith the Indian Caniballes inuene theyr arrowes, growe on certayne trees couered with many branches and leaues, being very greene, and grow- ing thicke. They are laden with abundance of these euyl fruites, and haue their leaues lyke the leaues of a peare tree, but that they

are lesse and rounder: the fruit is much lyke the mustadel peares of the Ilande of Sicilie or Naples in soume and bygnesse, and are in some partes steyned with redde spottes, and of very sweet sauour: these trees for the most parte, growe euer by the sea coastes, and neere vnto the water, and are so sayde and of pleasaunt sauour, that there is no man that seeth them, but will desyre to eate thereof, insomuche that if it may bee spoken of any fruite yet growyng on the earth, I woulde say that this was the unhappy fruite wherof our first parentes Adam and Eue tasted, whereby they both lost theyr felicitie, and procured death to them and theyr posteritie. Of these fruites, and of the great Antes whose byting causeth swelling, (wherof I haue spoken elsewhere) and of the Cutes, or Lysters, and byppers, and such other venomous thynge, the Canibals which are the cheefe archers

Note.

Caniballes are
chere.

archers among the Indians, are accustomed to poison they^{er} arrows, wherewith they kill all that they wounde: These be-^{wherewith they inuenome they arrows.} comes they mingle together, and make thereof a blacke masse of composition, whiche appeareth lyke unto very blacke pitch. Of this poison I caused a great quantitie to be burnt, in *Santa Maria Antiqua*, in a place two leagues and more within the lande, with a great multitude of they^{er} inuenomed arrows and other munition, with also the house wherein they were reserued: This was in the yeere. 1514. at suche tyme as the army app-^{er} ued there with captayne *Pedarias da villa*, at the commaundement of the Catholyke kyng *Don Ferdinando*. But to returne to the history. These Apples (as I haue sayde) growe neare vnto the sea. And whereas the Chyistians whiche serue your maiestie in these parties, suppose that there is no remedy so profytable for such as are wounded with these arrows, as is the water of the sea, if the wound be much washed therewith, by which meanes some haue escaped, although but fewe: yet to say the trueth, albeit the water of the sea haue a certaine caustike quality against poison, it is not a sufficient remedy in this case, nor yet to this day haue the Chyistians perceyued that of sytite that haue been wounded, thye haue recovered. But that your maiestie may the better consider the force of the venome of these trees, you shal further vnderstand, that if a man doe but repose him selfe to sleepe a litle whyle vnder the shadow of the same, he hath his head & eyes so swolne when he waketh, that the eye liddes are ioyned with the cheekes, and if it chaunce one droppe or more of the deaw of the sayde tree to fall into the eye, it utterly destroyeth the syght. The pestilent nature of this tree is suche, that it can not be declared in fewe wordes. Of these, there groweth great plentie in the gulfe of *Fraba*, towarde the North coast, on the West and East syde. The wood of these trees when it burneth, maketh so great a smoke, that no man is able to abyde it, by reason it causeth so great a payne in the heau.

Petrus Arias.

The water of the sea.

The gulfe of *Diaba*.

Among other trees whiche are in these Indies, as well in the Ilandes, as in the firme lande, there is an other kynde whiche they call *Xagua*, whereof there is great plentie: they^{er} are very hygh, and steyght, and saye to beholde. Of these they vse to make pykes, and *lancons* of dyuers lengths and

Ca.ii.

hygh.

hygnetle: they are of a sayre colour, betweene russet and whyte: this tree hyngeth forth a great fruit as hygge as Papauer or Popple, and muche lyke therunto, it is very good to bee eaten when it is ripe. Out of this they get a very cleare water, wherewith they washe their legges, and sometymer all theyr bodies, when they feele theyr fleshe weery, saynt, or loose: the which water, besyde that it hath a byndyng qualitie, it hath also this propertie, that whatsoeuer it toucheth, it styreneth it blacke by litle and litle, vntyll it bee as blacke as gete, which colour can not bee taken away in lesse space then terme of twelue dayes: And if the naylor bee but touched therewith, it is so styrened that it can by no meanes bee taken away, vntyll it eether fall of, or grow out, and bee clipped away by litle & litle, as I my selfe haue ostentymes seene by experience.

Hobi.

Some thinke these to be mirrobalanes.

There is an other kynde of trees which they call *Hobi*: these are very great and sayre, and cause holefome ayre where they growe, and a pleasant shadowe, and are founde in great abundance: theyr fruit is very good, and of good tast and saour, and much lyke vnto certayne damsons or pynes being litle and pelowe, but theyr stone is very great, by reason wherof they haue but litle meate: theyr bark or rinde boyled in water, maketh a holefome bathe for the legges, because it byndeth and stayeth the loosenesse of the fleshe, so sensibly that it is a marueyle to consider. It is surely a holefome and excellent bathe agaynst suche sayntnesse, and is the best tree that may be founde in those parties to sleepe vnder: For it causeth no heauinesse of the head, as doe byuers other trees, which thyng I speake, because the Christians are muche accustomed in those regions to lye in the fieldes. It is therefore a common practise among them, that wheresoeuer they fynde these trees, there they spreade theyr mattresses and beddes wherein they sleepe.

Date trees.

There are also a kynde of hygh *Date trees*, and full of thornes: the woodde of these is most excellent, being very blacke, and thynnyng, and so heauy that no parte thereof can swymme aboue the water, but syncketh immediately to the bottome. Of this woodde they make theyr arrowes and darts, also *Touelyns*, speares, and pykes: and I say pykes, because that in the coastes of the sea of *Sar*, beyonde *Esquegad* and

Chinhabis sautes of the sea of *Sar*.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

And *Tiacha*, the Indians vse great and long pipes, made of the wood of these *Date* trees. Of the same likewise they make clubs, bes, and swords, and dyuers other weapons: Also vesselles and houlholde stuffe of dyuers sortes, very saye and commodious. Furthermore of this wood the Christians vse to make dyuers muscalle instrumentes, as *Claricymballes*, *Lutes*, *Siterns*, and suche other, the which besyde theyr saye thynnyng colour lyke vnto gete, are also of a good sounde, and very durable, by reason of the hardnesse of the wood.

After that I haue sayde thus much of trees and plants, I haue thought good also to speake somewhat of hearbes. You shal therefore vnderstand, that in these Indies there is an hearbe much like vnto a yelow *Lilte*, about whose leaues there growe and creepe certayne cordes of lases, as the lyke is partly seene in the hearbe which we call lased sauery, but these of the Indies are much bigger, and longer, and so strong that they tye theyr hangyng beds thereby, whiche they call *Hamacas*, whereof we haue spoken elsewhere: these cordes they call *Cabnia*, and *Henequen*, whiche are all one thynng, sayng that *Henequen* is lesse and of a fyner substance, as it were linc, and the other is grosser, lyke the weeke or twyll of hempe, and is imperfect in comparison to the other: they are of colour betweene whyte and yelow, lyke vnto abarne, and some also whyte. With *Henequen*, whiche is the most subtyle and fyne threed, the Indians saue in sunder fetters, cheynes, or barres of Iron, in this maner: They moue the threed of *Henequen* vppon the Iron which they intende to saue or cutte, drawyng the one hande after the other as doe they that saue, puttyng euer now and then a portion of fyne sande vppon the threed, or on the place or parte of the Iron, where they continue rubbyng the sayde threed, so that if the threed be woyme, they take an other, and continue in theyr worke as befoze, vntyll they haue cutte in sunder the Iron, although it be neuer so bygge, and cut it as if it were a tender thynng, and easy to be sawne.

And soasmuche as the leaues of trees may bee counted among hearbes, I will heere speake somewhat of the qualitie of the leaues of certayne trees whiche are founde in the Ilande of *Hispaniola*. These trees are so full of thornes, that there is no tree or plant that seemeth more wyde and desquoyed: so that

An hearbe that
beareth cordes.

Cabnia and
Henequen.

A strange
thynng.

Leaues.

Cr.iii.

I can

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

421

I can not well determine whether they be trees, or plants: they haue certayne branches full of large and deformed leaues, which branches were first leaues lyke vnto the other. As the branches made of these leaues grow forth in length, there cometh other leaues of them: so that in fine it is a difficult thing to describe the forme of these trees, except the same should be done by a picture, wherby the eye might conceiue that wherem the tongue sayleth in this behalfe. The leaues of this tree are of suche vertue, that being well beaten and spred vpon a cloth, after the maner of a playster, and so layde to a legge or arme that is broken in many peeces, it healeth it in syxtiene dayes, & maketh it as whole as though it had neuer been broken: Durynge the tyme of this operation, it cleaueth so fast to the fleshe, that it can not without much difficultie be taken away, but as soone as it hath healed the soie, and wrought his operation, it looeth it selfe from the place where it was layde, as I my selfe, and dyuers other which haue proued it, know by experience.

A leafe of great
vertue.

Of fishes, and of the maner
of fyshyng.



In the sea coastes of the firme lande, there are dyuers & sundry kyndes of fishes, muche differing in shape & forme. And although it be impossible to speake of all, yet will I make mention of some, And first to begin at Sardines, you shall vnderstand that there is found a kinde of these fishes very large and with red caples, being a very delicate fysh. The best kyndes of other fishes are these, *Moxarre*, *Diabace*, *Brettes*, *Dabaos*, *Chornebackes*, & *Salmons*: All these, and dyuers other which I doe not now remember, are taken in great quantitie in cyuers. There are like wise taken very good *Creyppes*. There are also found in the sea, certayne other fishes, as *Soles*, *Spaketels*, *Turbus*, *Palamite*, *Lizze*, *Polpi*, *Chieppe*, *Xaibas*, *Locustes*, *Oysters*, exceeding great *Toptopfes*, & *Tiburoni* of marueilous bygnesse: also *Manades*, and *Murque*, and many other fishes, which haue no names in our language, and these of suche diuersitie and quantitie, as can not

Tiburoni.
Manades.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

not be expressed without large wytyng and long tyme: But to let passe to treate particulerly of the multitude of fishes, I intende to speake chiefly, and somewhat largely, of thre sortes of most notable fishes: whereof the first is, the great *Coctoples*, the seconde is called *Tiburon*, and the thyrd *Manatr*. And to begin at the first, I say that in the *Islands* of *Cuba*, are founde great *Coctoples* (which are certayne shell fishes) of suche byggnesse that denne of fyfene men are scarcely able to lyfte one of them out of the water, as I haue been informed of credible persons dwelling in the same *Island*. But of that which I my selfe haue seene, I can testifie, that in the *same* lande, in the village of *Acla*, there are of this sorte some taken and kylled of suche byggnesse, that fyre men with muche difficultie coulde scarcely drawe them out of the water, and commonly the least sort of them are as much as two men may carry at a burden: that whiche I sawe lyfted by fyre men, had her shell a yarde and a quarter in length, and in breadth moze then fyue yardes. The maner of takinge them, is this: At sometymes chaunceth that in theyr great nettes (whiche they call *shoote nettes*) there are founde certayne *Coctoples* of the common sort, in great quantities, and when they come out of the sea, and byng soorth theyr egges, and goe together by companies from the sea, to feede on the lande, the *Christians* or *Indians* folowe theyr *steppes* which they fynde in the lande, and soone ouertake them, because they are very heauy and slowe in goyng, although they make all the hast they can to returne to the sea, as soone as they espie any bodie. When they that pursue them haue ouertaken them, they put a stake or staffe vnder theyr legges, and ouerturne them on theyr backes as they are yet rummyng, so that they can goe no further, nor yet ryle or gayne or turne, and thus they suffer them to lye still whyle they folowe after the rest, which they ouerturne in lyke maner: and by this meanes take very many, at suche tymes as they come soorth of the sea as I haue sayde: This fysh is very excellent and wholesome to be eaten, and of good tast. The seconde of the thre fishes whereof I haue spoken, is the *Tiburon*: this is a very great fish, and very quicke and swifte in the water, and a cruell devourer: these are oftentimes taken, as well when the shippes are vnder sayle in the Ocean, as also when they lye at anker, or at

Great Coctoples.

Tiburons.

Ce.iii.

sup

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

423

any other tyme, and especially the leaste kynde of these fische.
 When the shypes are under sayle, the byggest foze are taken
 after this maner. When the *Tiburon* seeth the shyppe saylyng, he
 foloweth it swymmyng behynde, the whiche thinges the mari-
 ners seeyng, call foorth all the fylch of the shyppe into the sea for
 the fische to eat, who neuerthelesse foloweth them with equall
 pace, although they make neuer suche haste with full wynde and
 sayles, and waloweth on euery syde and about the shyp, and thus
 foloweth it sometyme for the space of a hundred & fytie leagues,
 and moze, and when the mariners are disposed to take them,
 they cast downe by the sterne of the shyppe a hooke of Iron, as
 bygge as the byggest spnger of a mans hande, of thre spannes
 in length, and crooked lyke a fischebooke, with beardes acco-
 dyng to the bygnesse thereof, and fastened to an Iron cheyne of
 fyue or fyxe lynkes neare vnto the ende, and from thence tyed
 with a great rope, fastnyng also on the hooke for a bayte, a peece
 of some fische, or hogges fleshe, or some other flesh, or the bowels
 and intralles of an other *Tiburon* which they haue taken before,
 whiche may easily be done, for I haue seene niene taken in one
 day, and if they would haue taken moze, they myght also. Thus
 when the *Tiburon* hath pleasauntly folowed the shyppe a long
 vsage, at the length he swaloweth the bayte with the hooke, and
 as well by his stryuyng to flee or escape, as also by the swyft pas-
 sage of the shyppe, the hooke ouerthwartagh and catcheth holde
 of his chappes: the whiche fische when it is taken, it is of such
 huge byggenesse, that twelue or fyfene men are scarcely able
 to drawe it out of the water, and lyft it into the shyppe, where one
 of the mariners gyueth it many knockes on the head with a club
 or beetle, vntyll hee haue slayne it: they are sometymes founde
 of tenne or twelue foote long, and of fyue, sixe, or seuen spannes in
 breadth, where they are broadest: they haue very great and wyde
 mouthes, to the pproportion of the rest of theyr bodies, and haue
 two rowes of teeth, the one somewhat separate from the ocher,
 of cruell shape, and standyng very thicke. When they haue
 slayne this fische, they cut the body thereof in small peeces, and
 put it to dype, hangyng it thre or foure dayes at the cordes
 of the sayle clothes to dype in the wynde, and then eat it: It
 is doubtesse a good fische, and of great commoditie to serue the

the Shypes for vitalles for many dayes : the leaste of these
 fishes are most hollesome and tender, it hath a skynne muche
 lyke to the skynne of a Sole wherunto the sayd *Tiburon* is like
 in shape : Whiche I saye, because *Plinie* hath made mention
 of none of these three fishes, among the number of them wher
 of he writeth in his natural hystorie . These *Tiburons* come
 south of the sea, and enter into the ryuers, where they are no
 lesse perplous then great *Lisartes* or *Crocodiles*, wherof I haue
 spoken largely before : For they deuoure men, hynne, and hoxen,
 euen as do the *Crocodiles* : they are very daungerous in cer
 tayne washyng places or pooles by the ryuers sides, and where
 they haue deuoured at other tymes . Diuers other fishes both
 great and small, of sundry sortes and kyndes, are accustomed
 to folowe the Shypes goyng vnder sayle, of the whiche I will
 speake somewhat when I haue written of *Manate*, whiche is the
 shype of the three wherof I haue promised to entreate . *Manate*
 therefore, is a fysh of the sea, of the byggest sorte, and muche
 greater then the *Tiburon* in length and breadyth, and is very
 quiclyste and byle, so that it appeareth in fourine lyke vnto
 one of those great vessels made of goates skynnes, wherin they
 vse to cary newe wyne in *Medina de Campo*, or in *Arcualo* : the
 head of this beast is lyke the head of an Ox, with also like eyes,
 and hath in the place of arnes, two great stumpe wherwith he
 swymmeth : It is a very gentle and tame beast, and commeth of
 tentimes out of the water to the next shore, where if he fynd any
 beaues or grasse, he feedeth therof . Our men are accustomed to
 kyll many of these, and diuers other good fishes, with their crof
 bowes, pursuing them in barkes or *Canoas*, because they swim
 in maner aboute the water : the which thyng when they see, they
 drawe them with a hooke tyde at a small corde, but somewhat
 strong : As the fysh fleeth away, the archer letteth go, and pro
 longeth the corde by litle and litle, vntyll he haue let it go many
 fathams : at the ende of the corde, there is tyde a corke, or a
 peece of lycht woodde, and when the fysh is gone a litle way,
 and hath coloured the water with his blood, and seeleth hym
 selfe to saynt and drawe towarde the ende of his lyfe, he resor
 teth to the shore, and the archer foloweth, greatheryng by his
 corde, wherof whyle there yet remaine fyve or eynge fathams, or
 some

Plinie.

Crocodiles.

Manates.

Sometwhat more or lesse, he draweth it toward the lande, and draweth the fysh therewith by litle and litle, as the waues of the sea helpe hym to do it the more easly: then, with the helpe of the rest of his companie, he lysteth this great beaste out of the water to the lande, beyng of suche byggenesse, that to carrye it from thence to the citie, it shalbe requisite to haue a cart with a good yoke of Oxen, and sometymes more, accordyng as these fyshes are of byggenesse, some being much greater then other some in the same kinde, as is seene of other beastes: Sometymes they lyst these fyshes into the Canoa or barke, without drawyng them to the lande as before, for as soone as they are slayne, they floce about the water: And I beleue verily that this fysh is one of the best in the worlde to the tast, and the lykeliest vnto fleshe, especially so lyke vnto beefe, that who so hath not seene it whole, can iudge it to be none other when he seeth it in peeces then very beefe or veale, and is certaynly so lyke vnto fleshe, that all the men in the world may herein be deceyued: the tast likewise, is like vnto the tast of very good veale, and lasteth long, yf it be powdred: so that in fine, the Taste of these parts, is by no meanes lyke vnto this. This *Manate* hath a certayne Stone, or rather bone in his head within the brayne, whiche is of qualitie greatly appropriate agaynst the disease of the stone, if it be burnt and grounde into small powder, and taken fastyng in the morning when the paine is felte, in such quantitie as may lye vppon a penny, with a draught of good whyte wyne: For being thus taken thre or foure mornings, it acquieteth the greefe, as dyuers haue tolde me whiche haue proued it true, and I my selfe by testimonie of syght, do wytnesse that I haue seene this stone sought of dyuers for this effecte.

There are also dyuers other fyshes as bygge as this *Manate*, among the whiche there is one called *Vibuella*. This fysh beareth in the toppe of his head a swoorde, beyng on every syde full of many sharpe teeth, this swoorde is naturally very harde and strong, of foure or fyue spannes in length, and of propozition accordyng to the same byggenesse: and for this cause is this fysh called *Spada*, that is, the swoorde fysh. Of this kynde some are founde as litle as *Sardines*, and other so great, that two yokes of Oxen are scarcely able to drawe them

The fysh
Manate.

A remedy as
agaynst the
stone.

The swoorde
fysh.

them on a Cart. But whereas befoze I haue promised to speake of other fshes, whiche are taken in these seas whyle the shypes are vnder sayle, I wpll not forgeat to speake of the Tunnye, whiche is a great and good fshes, and is ofentymes taken and kybde with trout speares, and hookes, cast in the water, when they play and swym about the shypes. In lyke maner also are taken many Turbut, whiche are very good fshes as are lychtly in all the sea. And here is to be noted, that in the great Ocean sea, there is a strange thying to be consydered, whiche all that haue been in the Indies affirme to be true: And this is, that lyke as on the lande there are some prouinces fertile and fruitfull, and some barren, euen so doth the lyke chaunce in the sea: So that at some wyndes the shypes sayle fytie, or a hundred, or two hundred leagues and moze, without takyng or sleepng of one fshes: and agayne, in the selfe same Ocean in some places, all the water is seene tremble by the mouyng of the fshes, where they are taken abundantly. It commeth further to my remembraunce to speake somewhat of the sleepng of fshes, whiche is doubtlesse a strange thying to beholde, and is after this maner. When the shypes sayle by the great Ocean, folowng theyr viage, there rylch sometymes on the one syde or on the other, many companies of certayne litle fshes, of the whiche the byggest is no greater then a Sardyne, and so diminyshe lesse and lesse from that quantitie, that some of them are very lile: these are called *Volatori*, that is, sleepng fshes: they rylch by great companies and flockes, in suche multitudes that it is an astonysment to beholde them: Sometimes they rylch but lile from the water, & (as it chaunceth) continue one flyght for the space of an hundred paces, and sometymes moze, or lesse, befoze they fall agayne into the sea, sometymes also they fall into the shypes. And I remember, that on an euenyng when al the company in the shyp were on theyr knees, spyngng *Sa'ne regina* in the hyghest part of the Castell of the poupe, and sayled with a full wynde, there passed by vs a flocke of these sleepng fshes, and came so neare vs, that many of them fell into the shyppe, among the whiche, two or thye fel hard by me, whiche I tooke alyue in my hand, so that I myght well perceyue that they were as bygge as Sardines, and of the same quantitie,

Tunnye.

Turbut.

Note.

Sleepng fshes.

quantitie, hauing two wynges or quilles growing out of theyr
 synnes, lyke vnto those wherewith all fyshes swym in ryuers:
 these wynges are as long as the fyshes them selues. As long
 as they wynges are moyst, they beate them vp in the ayre,
 but assoone as they are drye, they can contynue theyr flyght
 no further then as I haue sayde before, but fall immediatlye
 into the sea, and so ryle agayne, and flee as before from place
 to place. In the yeere a thousand, fyue hundred, and fyfteeene,
 when I came fyrst to enfourme your Maiestie of the state of the
 thynges in India, and was the yeere solowynge in Flaun-
 ders in the tyme of your most fortunate successe in these your
 kyngdomes of Aragonie and Castyle, whereas at that vyge
 I sayled about the Ilande *Bermuda*, otherwysse called *Garza*,
 beyng the furthest of all the Ilandes that are founde at this
 daye in the worlde, and arryuyng there at the deapth of eynht
 yardes of water, and distaunt from the lande as farre as the
 shotte of a peece of Ordnauce, I determyned to sende some of
 the shyp to lande, aswell to make searche of suche thynges as
 were there, as also to leaue in the Ilande certayne Hogges for en-
 crease. But the tyme not seruing my purpose by reason of con-
 trary wynde, I coulde byyng my shyppes no nearer the Ilande,
 beyng twelue leagues in length, and syxe in bzeadth, and about
 thyrtye in circuite, lying in the thre and thyrtyeth degree of the
 North syde. Whyle I remayned heere, I saw a stryfe and com-
 bat betwecne these fleeing fyshes, and the fyshes named Gylt
 heades, & the foules called Seamewes, and Cozmozantes, which
 surely scemed vnto me a thyng of as great pleasure and solace as
 coulde be deuised, while the Gylt heades swam on the bymme
 of the water, and sometymes lysted theyr shoulers about the
 same, to ruple the sleeping fyshes out of the water to dryue them
 to flyght, and solowe them swymmyng to the place where
 they fal, to take and eate them sodenly. Againe on the other syde,
 the Seamewes and Cozmozantes, take many of these flee-
 yng fyshes, so that by this meanes they are neyther safe in the
 ayre, nor in the water. In the selfe same peryll and danger doo
 men lyue in this moxtall lyfe, wherein is no certayne securitie,
 neyther in hyghe estate, nor in lowe. Which thyng surely ought
 to put vs in remembraunce of that blessed and safe resting
 place

The Iland of
 Bermuda

Not to die for
 the hyc, nor to
 lowe for the
 Crowe.

place whiche God hath prepared for suche as loue hym, who shall acquiete and synithe the trauailes of this troublous world, wherein are so many dangers, and bying them to that eternall lyfe where they shall fynde eternall securitie and rest. But to returne to the hy storye: these byrdes and foules whiche I sawe, were of the Ilande of *Bermuda*, neere vnto the whiche I sawe these fleyng fyshes: for they coulde be of no other lande, forasmuche as they are not accustomed to wander farre from the coastes where they are bredde.

Of thincrase and decrease (that is) rysyng
and fallyng of our Ocean sea, and
South sea, called the sea of *Sur*.



L I will nowe speake of certayne thynges whiche are seene in the Province, or at the least in the cite of golden Castyle, otherwyse called *Beragua*, and in the coastes of the North sea, & of the South sea, called the sea of *Sur*, not omitting to note one synguler and marueplous thyng whiche I haue consydered of the Ocean sea, wherof hitherto no Cosmographer, Pilot, or Haryner, or any other, haue satisfed me. I say therefore, as it is well knowen to your maiestie, and all such as haue knowledge of the Ocean sea, that this great Ocean casteth from it selfe the sea *Mediterraneum* by the mouth of the straght of *Gibilterra*. in the which the water, from the end & furthest part of that sea, euen vnto the mouth of the sayde straght, eyther in the East toward the coaste commonly called *Leuante*, or in any other part of the sayde sea *Mediterraneum*. the sea doth not so fall nor increase, as reason woulde iudge for so great a sea, but increaseth very litle, and a small space: Nevertheless, with out the mouth of the straght in the mayne Ocean, it increaseth and falleth very muche, and a great space of grounde, from fyre houres to fyre houres, as in all the coastes of *Spainne*, *Britanie*, *Flaunders*, *Germanie*, and *England*. The selfe same Ocean sea in the firme lande newly founde, in the coastes of the same lying toward the North, doth neyther rylse nor fall, nor lykwyse in the Ilandes of *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*, and al the o-
ther

The West
Ocean.
The sea *Mediterraneum*.

Hispaniola
Cuba

Libr. The decades.
Mancroft Library.

cher Ilandes of the same lying toward the north, for the space of three thousand leagues, but onely in lyke maner as dooth the sea *Mediterraneum* in Italy, which is in maner nothyng, in respecte to that increase and decrease whiche the sayde Ocean hath in the coastes of Spayne and Flaunders. But this is yet a greater thyng, that also the selfe same Ocean in the coastes of the sayde spynne lande lying toward the South, in the citie of *Panama*, and also in the coast of that lande whiche lyeth toward the East and West from that citie, as in the Ilande of pearles or *Margarites*, whiche the Indians call *Tarracqui*, and also in *Taboga* and *Otoque*, and in all other Ilandes of the south sea of *Sur*, the water ryleth and falleth so muche, that when it falleth, it goeth in maner out of syght, whiche thyng I my selfe haue seene oftentymes. And here your maiestie may note another thing, that from the north sea to the south sea, being of such difference the one from the other in ryllyng and falllyng, yet is the lande that deuiddeth them not past epyghtene or twentie leagues in breadth from coaste to coaste: So that both the sayde seas, beyng all one Ocean, this strange effecte is a thyng worthy greatly to be consydered of all suche as haue inclination and desyre to knowe the secreete woorkes of nature, wherein the infinite power and wysedome of God is seene to be suche, as may allure al good natures to reuerence and lotie so diuine a maiestie. And wheras by þ demonstrations of learned men I am not satisfied of the naturall cause hereof, I content my selfe to knowe and beleue, that he whiche hath made these thynges, dooth knowe this and many other, whiche he hath not graunted to the reason of man to comprehend, muche lesse to so base a wyt as myne is. They therefore that are of greater vnderstandyng, shall search the cause hereof for them and for me, forasmuch as I haue onely put the matter in question, as a wpynesse that haue seene the experience of the thyng,

Of

The South sea.

The power and wysedome of God is seene in his creatures.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the straght or narrowe passage of the land lying betweene the North and South sea, by the which spycs may much sooner and easlyer be brought from the Ilandes of *Molucca* into Spaine by the *VVest* Ocean, then by that way whereby the Portugales sayle into the East India.



T hath been an opinion among the Cosmographers and Pilottes of late tyme, and other whiche haue had practyse in thynge touching the sea, that there shoulde be a straght of water passing from the North sea of the tyme, into the South sea of *Sur*, which neuer thelesse hath not been seene nor founde to this day. And surely yf there be any such straght, we that inhabite those partes do thynke the same shoulde be rather of land then of water. For the tyme land in some partes thereof is so straght and narrowe, that the Indians say that from the mountaynes of the prouince of *Esquegua* or *Vrraca* (whiche are betweene the one sea and the other) if a man ascend to the top of the mountaines, and looke toward the North, he may see the water of the North sea of the prouince of *Beragua*: & againe looking the contrary way, may on the other syde (towards the South) see the sea of *Sur*, and the prouinces which confine with it, as do the territories of the two Lordes or kynges of the sayde prouinces of *Vrraca* and *Esquegua*. And I beleue, that yf it be as the Indians say, of all that is hitherto knowen, this is the narrowest straght of the tyme land, whiche some affirme to be full of rough mountaynes. Yet do I take it for a better way, or sooer as is that whiche is made from the port called *Nomen Dei* (whiche is in the North sea) vnto the newe cite of *Panama*, being in the coast and on the bancke of the sea of *Sur*, whiche way is lykewyse very rough, full of thicke wooddes, mountaynes, rpuers, valleyes, and very difficult to passe through, and can not be done without great labour & trauaile. Some measure this way in this part, to be from sea to sea eighteene leagues, whiche I suppose to be rather twentie, not for that it is any more by measure, but because it is rough and difficult, as I haue sayde,

Esquegua and Vrraca.

Nomen Dei. Panama,

sayde, and as I haue founde it by experience, hauing nowe thasse
 passed that way by soote, counting from the port and village of
 Nomen Dei, unto the dominion of the Cacique of Inanaga, other
 wyse called Capira, eyght leagues, and from thence to the ryuer
 of Chagre, other eyght leagues. So that at this ryuer, beyng six-
 teene leagues from the sayde port, endeth the roughnesse of the
 way: then from hence to the marueilous bypdge are two leagues,
 and beyonde that, other two, unto the port of Panama: So that
 altogether, in my iudgement, make twentie leagues. And yf
 therfore this nauigation may be founde in the South sea for the
 trade of spyces (as we trust in God) to be brought from thence
 to the sayde port of Panama (as ts possible enough) they maye
 afterwarde easely passe to the North sea, notwithstanding the
 difficultie of the way of the twentie leagues aforesayde. Which
 thyng I affirme, as a man wel trauapled in these regions, ha-
 uing twyse on my feete passed ouer this straght in the yeere
 1521, as I haue said. It is furthermore to be understood, that it
 is a marueilous facilitie to bypng spyces by this way which I wil
 now declare. From Panama to the ryuer of Chagre, are foure
 leagues of good and sayre way, by the which cartes may passe at
 pleasure, by reason that the mountayns are but few and litle, and
 that the greatest part of these foure leagues is a playne grounde
 boyde of trees: and when the cartes are come to the sayde ryuer,
 the spyces may be caried in Barkes and ymmelles. For this
 ryuer entreth into the North sea spue or syre leagues lower then
 the port of Nomen Dei, and emptieth it selfe in the sea neere unto
 an Island called Bastimento, where is a verpe good and safe port.
 Your maiestie may now therfore consyder, howe great a thyng,
 and what commoditie it may be to conuey spyces this way, foras-
 much as þe ryuer of Chagre, hauing his originall only two leagues
 from the South sea, continueth his course, and emptieth it selfe
 into the other North sea. This ryuer runneth fast, and is verpe
 great, and so commodious for this purpose as may be thought
 or desired: the marueilous bypdge made by the worke of nature,
 beyng two leagues beyond the sayde ryuer, & other two leagues
 on this syde the port of Panama, so lying in the mydde waye be-
 tweene them both, as framed naturally in suche sort, that none
 which passe by this viage doth see any such bypdge, or thinke that
 there

The ryuer of
Chagre.

The Ilande
Bastimento.

The marueil-
ous bypdge.

there is any such buydoyng in that place, untill they be in the top thereof, in the way towarde *Panama*: But as soone as they are on the bydge, looking towarde the ryght hande, they see a litle ryuer vnder them, whiche hath his chanell distant from the scete of them that walke ouer it, the space of two speares length or more. The water of this ryuer is very shalowe, not passing the depth of a mans legge to the knee, and is in breadth betweene thyrtye and fourtie paces, and falleth into the ryuer of *Chagre*. Towarde the ryght hand, standyng on this bydge, there is nothing seene but great trees. The largenesse of the bydge conteyneth fiftene paces, and the length thereof about threescore or fourescore paces: The arche is so made of most harde stone, that no man can beholde it without admiration, beyng made by the bygh and omnipotent creatour of all thinges. But to returne to speake somewhat moze of the conueying of spices, I say, that when it shall please almyghtie God that this nauigation aforesayde shall be founde by the good fortune of your maiestie, and that the spices of the *Ilandes of the South sea* (whiche may also be otherwise called the *Ocean of the East India*, in the which are the *Ilandes of Molucca*) shall be brought to the sayd coast and the port of *Panama*, and be conueyed from thence (as we haue sayde) by the byme lande with cartes vnto the ryuer of *Chagre*, and from thence into this our other sea of the North, from whence they may afterwarde be brought into *Spainne*, I say that by this meanes the viage shall be shortned moze then seuen thousand leagues, with muche lesse daunger then is by the viage nowe vsed by the way of *Commendator of Aysa*, captayne vnder your maiestie, who this present yeere attempted a viage to the place of the sayd spices: and not only the way is thus muche shortned, but also a thyrd parte of the tyme is abbreviate. To conclude therefore, if any had hitherto attempted this viage by the sea of *Sar*, to seeke the *Ilandes of spices*, I am of firme opinion, that they shoulde haue been founde long since, as doubtlesse they may bee by the reasons of *Cosmographie*.

The *Ilandes*
of *Molucca*.

The commoditie
of this
viage.

Howe

Howe

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

433

Howe things that are of one kynde, dyffer in forme and qualitie, accordyng to the nature of the place where they are engendred or grow, and of the beastes called Tygers.

Tigers.



In the firme lande are founde many terrible beastes, which some thinke to bee Tygers. Whiche thing neuerthelesse I dare not as-
firme, considering what aucthours do wypte of the lyghtnesse and agilite of the Tyger, wheras this beast, being otherwyle in shape very like vnto a Tiger, is notwithstanding

very slowe. Yet true it is, that accordyng to the marueilles of the worlde, and differences which naturall thinges haue in dyuers regions vnder heauen, and dyuers constellations of the same, vnder the which they are created, we see that some suche plantes and hearbes as are hurtfull in one countrey, are harmelesse and holosome in other regions. And hyzdes whiche in one prouince are of good taste, are in other so vnlauery that they may not bee eaten. Men lykewyle whiche in some countreys are blacke, are in other places whyte: and yet are both these and they men. Euen so may it bee, that Tygers are lyght in some region, as they wyte, and may neuerthelesse be slow and heauy in these Indies of your maiestie, wherof we speake. The sheepe of Arable dratwe their tayles long and bigge on the ground, and the Bulles of Egypt haue theyr heare growyng towarde theyr heades: yet are those sheepe, and these bulles. Men in some countreys are hardy and of good courage, and in other naturally fearefull and huiuslye. All these thinges, and many more, whiche may bee sayde to this purpose, are easie to bee proued, and woorthy to bee beleueued, of suche as haue read of the lyke in aucthours, or traueyled the worlde, whereby theyr owne sight may teache them the experience of these thinges wherof I speake. It is also manifest that *Iucca*, wherof they make theyr bread in the *Islande of Hispaniola*, is deadly popson if it bee eaten greene with the iuile: and yet hath it no such propertie in the firme lande, where I haue eaten it many times, and found it to be a good fruit. The Bats of *Spaine*, although they bite, yet are they not venomous: but in the

Plantes and hearbes.

Birdes.

Men.

Sheepe.

Bulles.

Iucca,

Battes,

firme

same land, many vye that are bytten of them. And in this countrey
 may so many thinges be sayd, that tyme shall not suffice to write,
 whereas my intent is only to prooue that this beast may bee
 a Tyger, or of þe kynde of Tygers, although it be not of such light-
 nesse and swiftnesse as are they wherof Plinie & other aucthours
 speake, dyscrepyng it to bee one of the swyftest beastes of the
 lande, and that the ryuer of *Tigris* for the swyft course thereof
 was called by that name. The fyrst Spanyardes whiche sawe
 this Tyger in the firme lande, dyd so name it. Of the kynde of
 these was that which *Don Diego Columbo* the Admirall sent your
 maiestic out of newe Spayne to *Toledo*. Theyr heades are
 hke to the heades of Lions, or Lionesses, but greater: the rest
 of all theyr bodyes, and theyr legges, are full of blacke spottes
 one nere vnto an other, and diuided with a circumference or
 frydge of redde colour, shewyng as it were a fayre woozke
 and correspondent picture, about their croopes or hynder partes,
 they haue these spottes byggest, and lesse and lesse towarde theyr
 bellies, legges, and heades. That which was brought to *Toledo*,
 was young, and but litle, and by my estimation of the age of
 thre peeres: but in the firme lande there are many founde of
 greater quantitie, for I haue seene some of thre spans in height,
 and moze then siue in length. They are beastes of great force,
 with strong legges, and well armed with nayles and fanges,
 which wee call dogge teeth: they are so fierce, that in my iudge-
 ment no reall Lion of the byggest sort is so strong or fierce. Of
 these, there are many found in the firme lande, which deuour ma-
 ny of the Indians, & doe much hurt ocherwyle: but since the com-
 ming of the Christians, many haue been kylde with Crossebowes
 after this maner. As soone as the archer hath knowledge of the
 haunt of any of these Tigers, he goeth searching their trafe, with
 his crossebow & with a litle hound or begle, and not with a grey-
 hounde, because this beast would soone kylle any dog that would
 venter on hym: When the hounde hath founde the Tyger, he
 runneth about hym bayng continually, and approacheth so neare
 hym, snappyng and grynyng, with so quicke sleepe and re-
 turnyng, that he heereby so molested this fierce beast, that hee
 dyueth him to take the next tree, at the foote wherof he remaineth.

Plinie.

The Tiger.

The hunting
of Tigers.

still bayning, and the Tyger grunting and shewing his teethe, whyle in the meane tyme the archer commeth neare, and. xii. or. xiii. pases of, stryketh him with the querrell of his crossebowe in the best, and fleeth incontinent, leaping the Tyger in his tra- uayle for lyfe and death, bytyng the tree and eating earth for fiercenesse: then within the space of two or thre houres, or the day folowynge, the archer returneth thither, and with his dogge fyndeth the place where he lyeth dead. In the peere. 1522. I with the other rulers and magistrates of the citie of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, tooke order in our counsaile, a rewarde of foure or fyue peeces of golde to bee giuen to euery man that kyled any of these Tygers: by reason whereof many were kild in thoyte space, both with crossebowes, and also with dyuers snares and ingens. But to conclude, I will not obstinately stand in opinion whether these beastes be Tygers or Panthers, or of the number of any other suche beastes of spotted heare, or also peraduenture some other newe beast vnknewen to the olde wy- ters, as were many other whereof I haue spoken in this booke: Of whiche thyng I doe not greatly marueyle, forasmuche as vnto our tyme this great part of the worlde was vnknewen to the antiquitie, insonuche that none of the wyters of that age, nor yet Ptolome in his *Colmographe*, or any other since him, haue made any mention hereof, vntyll the fyrst Admyrall *Don Christopher Colonus* discovered the same: A thing doubtlesse with- out comparyson muche greater then that which is layde of *Hercules*, that he fyrst gaue the entrance of the sea *Mediterraneum* into the Ocean, whiche the Grekes coulde neuer doe before him. And heereof ryseth the fable that the mountaynes of *Calpe* and *Abila* (whiche are directly one agaynst an other in the strayght of *Gibilterra*, the one beyng in *Spayne*, and the other in *Affryke*) were ioynded togeather before they were opened by *Hercules*, who erected those his pillers which your maiestie giue in token of prehemynence and lyke enterpysses, with likewise these his wordes *Plus Ultra*, wordes doubtlesse woorthy for so great and vniuersall an Emperour, and not conuenient for any other Prince: forasmuche as your holy Catholyke ma- iestie haue spredde them in so strange and remote regions, so many thousand leagues further then euer vnto *Hercules*. And cer- tainly

A rewarde for
kyllynge of Ty-
gers.

Colonus com-
pared to Her-
cules.

The pillers of
Hercules.
The straghtes
of *Gibilterra*.

Note.

Plus Ultra.
Howe farre the
Emperours
maiestie excele-
thy *Hercules*.

tryndly say, if there had been an Image of gold made in the praise and fame of *Colonus*, he had as well deserved it, as any of those men to whom for theyr noble enterpryse the antiquitie gaue diuine honour, if he had been in theyr tyme. But to returne to the matter whereof I began to speake: I neede say no more of the fourme of this beast, forasmuch as your Maistie haue seene that whiche is yet aloue in *Toledo*. And surely the keeper of your maiesties Lions, who hath taken bypon him the charge to tame this beast, myght better haue bestowed his paynes in an other thing that myght haue been more profitable for the safegarde of his lyfe, because this Tyger beyng yet but young, will dayly be stronger and fiercer, and increase in malyce. The Indians (and especially they of the firme lande in the prouince whiche the Catholyke Kyng *Don Ferdinando* commaunded to be called golden Castyle) call this beast *Ochi*. This thing is strange that chaunced of late: that whereas the Tiger wherof we haue made mention befoze, would haue kylde his keeper that then kept him in a cage, was in fewe dayes after made so tame, that he ledde her tyed only with a small corde, and playde with her so familiarly, that I marueyled greatly to see it, yet not without certayne beleefe that this friendship will not last long, without danger of life to the keeper, forasmuche as surely these beastes are not meete to bee among men, for theyr fiercenesse and cruell nature that can not be tamed.

A Tyger made tame.

Of the maners and customes of the Indians of the firme lande, and o' their women.



The maners & customes of these Indians, are dyuers in diuers prouinces. Some of them take as many wiues as them list, and ocher lyue with one wyfe, whom they forsake not without consent of both parties, which chaunceth especially when they haue no chyldren. The nobilitie of well men as

women, repute it infamous to loyne with any of base partridge or strangers, except Christians, whom they count noble men, by reason of their valiantnesse, although they put a difference betwene the common sort & the other to whom they shewe obedience, counting it for a great matter & an honorable thing, if they

The Indian women.

Fl.iii.

bee

bee beloved of any of them: insomuche that if they knowe any Christian man carnally, they keepe their sayth to him, so that bee bee not long absent farre from them, for they intent is not to be widowes, or to liue chaste lyke religious women. Many of them haue this custome, that when they perceyue that they are with chyld, they take an hearbe wherwith they destroy that is conceiued: for they say that only well aged women should beare chyldren, and that they wil not forbear their pleasures, and defourne their bodie with bearyng of chyldren, whereby they teates become loose & hanging, which thing they greatly dispraise. When they are deliuered of theyr chyldren, they goe to the ryuer & washe them, whiche done, theyr blood and purgation ceaseth immediately: And when after this they haue a fewe dayes absteyned from the company of men, they become so strayght, as they say which haue had carnall familiaritie with them, that such as vse them, can not without much difficultie satisfie theyr appetite: They also whiche neuer had chyldren, are euer as virgins. In some partes they weare certayne litle apernes rounde about them befoze and behynde, as low as to theyr knes and hammes, wherewith they couer theyr priuie partes, and are naked all their bodie besyde. The principall men beare theyr priuities in a hollow pype of go'de, but the common sorte haue them inclosed in the shelles of certayne great welkes, and are besyde vterly naked: For they thinke it no moze shame to haue theyr coddies seene, then any other parte of theyr bodie: and in many prouinces both the men and women go vterly naked, without any such couerture at all. In the prouince of *Cuen* they call a man *Chny*, and a woman *Ira*, whiche name is not greatly disagreeable to many both of theyr women and of ours. These Indians gyue great honour and reuerence to theyr *Cacique* (that is) theyr kynges and rulers. The principall *Cacique* hath the chiefe of his most strong Indians appointed to beare him, when he remoueth to any place, or goeth abrode for his pleasure. Two of them cary him sitting vppon a long peece of wood, which is naturally as lyght as they can fynde, the other tenne folow next vnto him as footmen: they keepe continually a trottyng pace with him on their shoulders. When the two that cary him are weery, other two come in their places, without any disturbance or staye. And thus

The men of India.

The king is borne on mens backs.

thus if the way bee playne, they cary him in this maner for the space of .xv. or .xvii. leagues in one day. The Indians that are assigned to this office, are for the most parte slaues, or *Naboriti*. that is, suche as are bounde to continuall seruice. I haue also noted that when the Indians perceyue them selues to be troubled with to much blood, they let them selues blood in the calves of theyr legges, and byawnes of theyr armes: this doe they with a very sharpe stone, and sometymes with the smal tooth of a *Uiper*, or with a sharpe reede or thorne. All the Indians are commonly without beardes, in somuch that it is in maner a maruelle to see any of them eyther men or women to haue any downe or heare on theyr faces, or other partes of theyr bodies: Albeit I sawe the *Cacique* of the prouince of *Catarapa*, who had heare on his face and other partes of his bodie, as had also his wyfe in such places as women are accustomed to haue. This *Cacique* had a great part of his body paynted with a blacke colour, which neuer fadeth, and is much lyke vnto that wherewith the *Hoxes* paynt them selues in *Barbarie* in token of nobilitie. But the *Hoxes* are paynted specially on their visage and throte, and certayne other partes. Lykewyse the principall Indians vse these payntynge on theyr armes and brestes, but not on theyr visages, because among them the slaues are so marked. When the Indians of certayne prouinces goe to the battayle (especially the *Canniball* archers) they cary certayne shelles of great welkes of the sea, which they blow, and make therewith great sound, much lyke the noyse of *hoxes*: they cary also certayne *Tymbrels*, which they vse in the stead of *Drummes*: also very sayre plumes of feathers, and certayne armure of golde, especially great and rounde peeces on theyr brestes, and splintes on their armes. Lykewyse other peeces, which they put on theyr heades and other partes of theyr bodies: For they esteeme nothyng so muche as to appeare galant in the warres, and to goe in most comely order that they can deuise, gylsterpyng with precious stones, Jewels, golde, and feathers. Of the least of these welkes or prewincles, they make certayne litle beads, of diuers sortes and colours: they make also litle bracelets, which they myngle with gaudies of golde, these they rowle about theyr armes from the elbowe to the wrist of the hande. The lyke also doe they on theyr legges

Lettyng of blood.

They haue no beardes.

They paynte their bodies.

The Cannibals.

Armure of golde.

Their galantise in the Warres.

Theyr Jewelles.

ff. iiii.

from

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

from the knee to the soles of they feete, in token of nobilitie, especially they noble women in dyuers prouinces are accustomed to weare suche Jewelles, and haue they neckes in maner laden therewith: these beades and Jewelles, and suche other trynkets, they call *Caquiras*. Besyde these also, they weare certayne rynges of golde at they eares and nostrilles, whiche they boze full of holes on both sydes, so that the rynges hang vppon they lippes. Some of these Indians are poulde and rounded: albeit commonly both the men and women take it for a decent thyng to weare long heare, whiche the women weare to the myddest of they shoulders, & cut it equally, especially about their browes: this doe they with certayne harde stones, whiche they keepe for the same purpose. The pyncipall women, when they teates fall, or become loose, beare them by with barres of gold, of the length of a spanne and a halfe, well wrought, and of suche byggenesse that some of them weygh more then twoo hundred Castellans or Ducades of golde: these barres haue holes at both the endes, wheremat they tye two small cordes made of cotton at euery ende of the barres: One of these cordes goeth ouer the shoulder, and the other vnder the arme holes, where they tye both togeather, so that by this meanes the barre beareth by they teates. Some of these chiefe women goe to the battayle with they husbandes, or when they them selues are regentes in any prouinces, in the whiche they haue all thinges at commaundement, and execute the office of generall captaines, and cause them selues to bee carped on mens backs, in lyke maner as doe the Caciques of wiyam I haue spoken before. These Indians of the firme lande are muche of the same stature and colour as are they of the Islands: they are for the most part of the colour of an olyue, if there be any other difference, it is more in bignesse then otherwise, & especially they that are called *Coronati*, are stronger and bygger then any other that I haue seene in these parties, except those of the Islande of *Giantes*, which are on the South side of the Islande of *Hispaniola*, neare vnto the coastes of the firme land, and likewise certayne other which they call *Incatos*, which are on the North syde. All which chiefly, although they bee no *Giantes*, yet are they doubtlesse the byggest of the Indians that are knownen to this day, & commonly bygger then the

Wolue the wo-
men beare by
they teates,
with barres
of golde.

The stature &
colour of the
Indians.
The Indians
called *Coro-
nati*.
The Islande of
Giantes.

Incatos.

the Flemmynges: and especially many of them, aswell women as men, are of very hygh stature, and are all archers both men and women. These Coronati inhabite thyrre leagues in length by these coastes, from the poynt of *Canoa* to the great ryuer which they call *Guadalcibiber*, neere vnto *Santa Maria de gratia*. As I trauerled by those coastes, I fylled a bryde of freshe water of that ryuer, fyve leagues in the sea from the mouth thereof where it falleth into the sea. They are called *Coronati* (that is crowned) because theyr heare is cutte rounde by theyr eares, and poulde lower a great compase about the crowne, much lyke the fryers of saint Augustines order. And because I haue spoken of theyr maner of wearyng theyr heare, heere cometh to my remembraunce a thyng which I haue oftentimes noted in these Indians: and this is, that they haue the bones of the sculles of theyr heades foure tymes thicker, and much stronger then ours, so that in commyng to handstrokes with them, it shalbe requisite not to strike them on the heads with swoordes, for so haue many swoordes been broken on theyr heades, with litle hurte doone. And to haue sayde thus much of theyr customes and maners, it shall suffice for this tyme, because I haue more largely intreated herof in my general historie of the Indies: Yet haue I neyther there nor here spoken muche of that part of the firme lande which is called *Noua Hispania* (that is, newe Spayne, whereof the Island of *Iucatana* is part) forasynuche as *Ferdinando Cortese* hath wrytten a large booke therof. Of the houses of these Indians, I haue spoken sufficiently els where: Yet haue I thought good to informe your maieste of þe building and houses which the Christians haue made in diuers places in the firme lande. They buylde them nowe therefore with two solars or loftes, and with loopes and wyndowes to open and shutte: also with strong tyber, and very sayne boordes, in suche sorte, that any noble man may well and pleasauntly be lodged in some of them. And among other, I my selfe caused one to be builded in the cite of *Santa Maria Antiqua* in *Dariena*, which cost me more then a thousand and five hundred Castellans, beyng of such sort that I may well entertayne and commodiously lodge any Lord or noble man, reseruing also part for my selfe and my familie: for in this may many householdes be kept, both aboue

The sculles of the Indians heades.

Newe Spayne.

The houses of the Christians in India.

Dariena,

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Gardens.

and beneath. It hath also a fayre garden, with many Orange trees, both sweete and soure: Cedars also, and Limons, of the which there is nowe great plentie in the houses of the Christians. On one hyde of the garden, there runneth a fayre riuer. The situation is very pleasaunt, with a good and hollosome ayre, and a fayre prospecte about the ryuer. In fine, our trust is that in fewe yeeres al thinges in these regions shal growe to a better state, accorpyng to the holy intencion of your maiestie.

Of the chiefe Ilandes *Hispaniola* and *Cuba*.



The Indians which at this present inhabite the Ilande of *Hispaniola*, are but fewe in number, and the Christians not so many as they ought to be, forasmuche as many of them that were in this Iland, are gone to other Ilandes, and to the tyrne lande. For beyng for the most parte young men unmarried, and desirous dany to see newe things, wherin mans nature delicteth, they were not willing to continue long in one place, especially seeing daily other newe landes discovered, where they thought they might sooner fill their purses, by being present at the fyrst spoyle: Wherin neuerthelessse their hope deceiued many of them, and especially such as had houses & habitacions in this Ilande: For I certainly belecue, confyrming my selfe herein with the iudgement of many other, that if any one Prince had no more seignories then only this Ilande, it shoulde in hoort tyme be such, as not to geue place either to *Sicilie* or *England*, wheras euen at this present there is nothyng wherefore it shoulde malice they prosperitie, not beyng inferiour to them in any felicitie, that in maner the heauens can graunt to any lande: beyng furthermore suche as may inryche many prouinces and kyngdomes, by reason of many ryche golde mynes that are in it, of the beste golde that is founde to this day in the worlde, and in greatest quantitie. In this Iland, nature of her selfe byngeth forth suche abundance of cotton, that if it were wought and mayntayned, there shoulde be moze and better then in any part of the worlde. There is so great plentie of excellent *Cassia*, that a great quantitie is brought from thence into *Spaine*, from whence it is carped

Men are desirous of newe thynges.

The commodities of *Hispaniola*, *England*, and *Sicilie*.

Golde mynes.

Cotton.

Cassia.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

carried to diuers partes of the worlde: It encreasech so muche, that it is a marueplous chyng to consider. In this are many ryche shoppes where Sugar is wrought, and that of suche perfectnesse and goodnesse, and in such quantitie, that shypps come laden therewith yeerely into Spayne. All such seedes, settes, or plantes, as are brought out of Spayne and planted in this Islande, become muche better, bygger, and of greater encrease then they are in any part of our Europe. And yf it chaunce otherwise that sometymes they prosper not so well, the cause is that they which should tyl and husband the ground, & sowe and plant in due seasons, haue no respect hereunto, beyng impatient whyle the wheat and vines were ripe, beyng greuen to wandering and other affayres of present ganyes (as I haue sayde) as searchoyng the golde mynes, fyshyng for pearles, and occuppyng marchaundises, with suche other trades. for the greedy following whereof, they neglect and contempne both sowyng and plantyng. Suche fruites as are brought out of Spayne, into this Island, prosper maraeploously, and were ripe all tymes of the yeere, as hearbes of al sortes very good and pleasaunt to be eaten. Also many Pomgranates of the best kynde, and Oranges both sweete and soure: Lyke wyse many sayde Limons and Cedars, and a great quantitie of all such as are of sharpe, soure, and bytter tast. There are also many Fygge trees, which byng sooth they; fruite all the whole yeere. Lyke wyse those kynde of Date trees that beare Dates, and diuers other trees and plantes, which were brought out of Spayne thither. Beastes do also encrease in lyke abundaunce, & especially the heardes of Kyne are so augmented both in quantitie and number, that there are now many patrons of cattaille that haue moze then two thousand heades of Meate, and some thre or toure thousande, and some moze. Besyde these, there are very many that haue heardes of foure or fyue hundred. And truely it is, that this Island hath better pasture for suche cattayle then any other countrey in the worlde: also hollesome and cleare water, and temperate ayre, by reason whereof the heardes of such beastes are much bygger, fatter, and also of better tast then ours in Spayne, because of the ranke pasture, whose moisture is better digested in the hearbe or grasse by the continuall & temperate heate of the Sonne, wherby

Sugar.

Plantes and
herbes.Great thynges
hindered by res-
pect of present
ganyes.Oranges.
Pomgranats.Fygges all the
yeere.
Dates.

Beastes.

Great heardes
of cattayle.

Good pasture.

The effect of
continuall and
moderate
heate.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

The cause of
fat nourish-
ment.

Beastes of long
lyfe in regions
about the E-
quinoctiall line.
Trees whose
leaves do not
wyther.

The canker of
the tree.

Long lyued
men in India.

Paradise neare
the Equinocti-
all line.

Sheepe and
Dogges.

Dogges and
Cattes become
wythe.

being made more fat and vinctuous, it is of better and more sub-
stant nourishment. For continuall and temperate heate, doth
not only dratwe much moysture out of the earth, to the nourish-
ment of such thynges as growe and are engendred in that clime,
but doth also by moderation p̄serue the same from resolution
and putrifaction, digesting also and condensatynge or thyeckynge
the sayde moyst nourishment into a gummie and vinctuous sub-
stance, as is seene in all suche thynges as growe in those regi-
ons: and this is the only naturall cause aswell that certayne
great beastes and of long lyfe (as the Elephant & Rhinoceros,
with suche other) are engendred only in the regions neare unto
the Equinoctiall, as also that the leaues of suche trees as growe
there, do not wyther or fall, vntyll they be thrust out by other,
accorbyng to the verse of the poet whiche sayeth, *Et nata pira pi-
ris, et ficus in ficibus extant.* this is in effect, Beares growing by-
on Beares, and Fygges byon Fygges. Plinie also wytteth,
that suche trees are neuer infected with the disease of trees that
the Latines call *Caries*, whiche we may call the wozme or can-
ker, beyng but a certayne putrifaction, by reason of a watrishe
nourishment not well consolidate. The same thyng hath been
the cause that certayne Whislophers, considering aswell that
man is the hottest and moystest beast that is (whiche is the best
complexion) as also that men lyue longest in certayne partes of
India neare the Equinoctiall (where yet to this day some liue to
the age of an hundred and fiftie yeeres) were of opinion that yf
mankynde had any beginning on the earth, that place ought by
good reason to be vnder or not farre from þ Equinoctiall line, for
the causes aforesayde. Some of the Diuines also vpon lyke con-
sideration, haue thought it agreable that theyr Paradise shoulde
be about the same, withyn þ precinct of those rivers which are na-
med in the booke of Genesis. But to let passe these thyngs, & to
returne to the hystorie. In this Iland furthermore are manye
Sheepe, and a great number of Dogges, of the which: (as
also of the Kyne) many are become wythe, and lyke wyse ma-
ny Dogges and Cattes, of those whiche were brought out of
Spayne: These (and especially the Dogges) do much hurt a-
mong the cattayle, by reason of the negligence of the beaeromen.
There

There are also many Eagles, Hares, and Rabbits, and such other beastes as serue the vse of men in Spayne, and are muche greater then they of the first kinde brought together out of Spayne. Some places of the Ilande are inhabited, although not so many as were requisite: Of the which I wyl say no more, but that al the regions of the Ilande are so well situate, that in the course of tyme all thynges shall come to greater perfection, by reason of the rychnesse & pleasauntnesse of the countrey, and fertilitie of the soyle. But nowe to speake somewhat of the principall and chiefe place of the Ilande, whiche is the cite of *San Domenico*: I saye, that as touchyng the buildinges, there is no cite in Spayne, so much for so much (no not *Barcelona*, which I haue oftentimes scene) that is to be preferred before this, generally: For the houses of *San Domenico*, are for the most parte of stone, as are they of *Barcelona*, or of so strong & wel wrought earth, that it maketh a singular and strong bynding. The situation is much better then that of *Barcelona*, by reason that the stretes are much larger and plainer, and (without comparison) more directe and streyght foorth: For being builded nowe in our tyme, besyde the commoditie of the place of the fundation, the stretes were also directed with corde, compasse, and measure, wherein it excelleth al the cities that I haue scene. It hath the sea so nere, that of one syde there is no more space betwene the sea and the cite then the walles, and this is about fiftie paces, where it is furthest of. On this syde, the waters of the sea beate vpon the natural stones and saye coast: On the other part, hard by the side and at the foote of the houses, passeth the riuer *Ozema*, which is a marueilous port, wherein laden shippes rise very nere to the land, and in maner vnder the house windowes, and no further from the mouth of the riuer where it entereth into the sea, then is from the foote of the hill of *Alonyia*, to the monastery of *Saint Fraunces*, or to the lodge of *Barcelona*. In the myddest of this space in the cite, is the fortrell and castle, vnder the which, and twentie paces distant from the same, passe the shippes to aryle somewhat further in the same riuer. From the entrance of the shippes vntyl they cast anchor, they sayle no further from the houses of the cite then thrye or fourtie paces, because of this site of the cite the habitation is nere to the riuer. The port of *Sancti*

The situation of Hispaniola.

The citi of San Domenico.

The riuer Ozema.

The Riuer.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

So is so fayre and commodious to vnterstraight or billade shippers, as the like is founde but in fewe places of the worlde. The chymneis that are in this citie, are about fyre hundred in number, and such houses as I haue spoken of before: Of the which some are so fayre & large, that they may well receiue and lodge any lord or noble man of Spayne with his traine & familie, and especially that which *Don Diego Colon*, viceroy vnder your maiestie, hath in this citie, is such that I knowe no man in Spayne that hath the lyke by a quarter in goodnesse, considering all the commodities of the same. Lykewyse the situation thereof, as beyng aboue the sayde pozte, and altogether of stone, and hauyng many fayre and large roomes, with as goodly a prospect of the lande and sea as may be deuised, seemeth vnto me so magnificall and princelyke, that your maiestie may be as well lodged therin, as in any of the most exquisite buylde houses of Spayne. There is also a Cathedral church builded of late, where aswel þ Bishop accordyng to his dignitie, as also the Canons are wel endewed. This church is wel builded of stone and lime, and of good woorkmanshpy. There are furthermoze thzee monasteries, bearyng the name of saint Dominike, saint Fraunces, and saint Marie of Mercedes, the which are all well buylde, although not so curiously as they of Spaine. But speakyng without preiudice of any other religious monasterie, your maiestie may be wel assured, that in these thzee monasteries god is as wel serued, as in any other religious house, with men of holy luyng & vertuous example. There is also a very good hospitall for the ayde and succour of poore people, which was founde by *Michael Passamont*, treasurer to your maiestie. To conclude, this citie from day to day increaseth in wealch and good order, aswel for that the saide Admiral & viceroy, with the lord Chauncelour and counsaile appointed there by your maiestie, haue they continuall abydng beere, as also that the rycheest men of the Ilande resort hither for they most commodious habitation, and trade of suche marchaundies as are eyther brought out of Spayne, or sent thither from this Ilande, whiche nowe so aboundeth in many thynge, that it serueth Spayne with many commodities, as it were with blury requityng suche benefices as it fynd receyued from thence. The people of this Ilande are commonly of somewhat lesse

A cathedrall
churche and
monasteris in
Hispaniola.

An Hospitall

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

lesse stature then are the Spaniards, and of a tawny or cleare
 browne coloure; they haue wyes of theyr owne, and absteyne
 from theyr daughters, sisters, and mothers: they haue large
 foreheades, long blacke beare, and no beardes or beare in anye
 other partes of theyr bodies, aswell men as women, except very
 fewe, as perhaps scarcely one among a thousand. They goe as
 naked as they were bozne, except that on the partes whiche may
 not with honestie be seene, they weare a certayne leafe as brode
 as a mans hande, whiche neuerthelesse is not kept close with such
 diligence, but that sometymes a man may see that they thynke
 sufficiently hyd. In this Island are certayne Glowormes, that
 shyne in the nyght as do ours, but are much bygger, and geue a
 greater lyyght: In somuch that when the men of the Islande goo
 any iorneyes in the night, they beare some of these wormes made
 fast about theyr feete and head, in such sozt that he that should see
 them a farrt, & ignozant of the thing, would be greatly astonished
 thereat. By the lyyght of these also, the women worke in theyr
 houses in the nyght. These wormes they cal *Cienas*. Their lyyght
 lasteth for the space of thye dayes, and diminisheth as they be-
 gin to dye vp. There is also a kynde of Crowes, whose breath
 synketh in the moynyng, and is sweete in the after noone: the
 excrement whiche they auoyde, is a lyying worme. As touching
 other thynges of this Island, whereof Peter Martyr hath more
 largely intreated in his Decades, I haue thought it superfluous
 to repeat the same agayne out of this historie of *Gonzalus Fer-*
dinandus, but haue heere gathered only such thynges as eyther
 are not touched of Peter Martyr, or not so largely declared, as
 I haue done the lyke in all other notable thynges, whiche I haue
 collected out of this *Summarie of Gonzalus*.

The people.

Glowormes.

Crowes stinks
pig & sweete.

Of the Islande of Cuba, and other.



Of the Islande of Cuba, and other, as the Is-
 landes of *Saint Iohannis*, and *Iamaica*, the
 same may be sayde in maner in all thinges
 as befoze of *Hispaniola*: although not so
 largely. Yet in lesse quantite do they bring
 forth the lyke thynges, as golde, copper,
 cattayle, trees, plantes, fyshes, and suche
 other, of the whiche we haue spoken there.

Saint Iohn
his Islande.
Iamaica.

No

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

Partridges.

The *Cuba* is a certayne kynde of Partridges, beyng verpe liche, with theyr feathers muche of the colour of Turtle Droues, but are of muche better tast to be eaten: they are taken in great number, and beyng brought wyde into the houses, they become as tame within the space of thre or foure dayes as though they had been hatched there: they become exceeding fat in short space, and are doubtlesse the most delicate and pleasaunt meate that euer I haue eaten. But to let passe many other thynges that myght be here sayd, and to speake of two marueylous thynges which are in this Ilande of *Cuba*: whereof the one is, that a valleye conteynyng two or thre leagues in length betweene two mountaynes, is full of a kynde of verpe harde stones, of suche perfect roundenesse, and lyke vnto Belletes of Gunnes, that no art can make better or more exactly pullished. Of these, some are as small as Belletes for Handgunnes, and other so increasyng bygger and bygger from that quantitie, that they maye serue for all sortes of Artyllarie, although they bee of byggenesse to receyue one or two or more Quintales of powder, euery Quintale conteynyng one hundred weyght, or of what other quantitie so euer they be. These Belletes are founde throughout al the valley within the earth, as in a mine, whiche they digge, and take out suche as they neede of al sortes. The other marueylous thyng of this Ilande is this: That farre from the sea, there issueth out of a mountayne a certayne lycour, muche lyke the Clep of Babylon, called *Bitumen*, or lyke vnto pytche, in great quantitie, and suche as is very commodious for the calkyng of shypes: this falleth continually from the rocke, and runneth into sea, in suche aboundance that it is seene flotyng aboute the water on euerye syde of the sea there about, as it is dyuen from place to place by the wynde or course of the water. *Quintus Curtius* wyteth in his historie, that great Alexander came to the citie of *Memi*, where is a great Cauer of Denne, in the whiche is a spring or fountayne that contynually auoydeth a great quantitie of *Bitumen*, in suche sort, that it is an easy thyng to beleue, that the stones of the walle of Babylon might be laid therewith, accordyng as the said auctour wyteth. I haue seene this myne of *Bitumen*, not only in the Ilande of *Cuba*, but also such an other in new Spaine, whiche was founde

Belletes for
Gunnes
wrought by nature.

A fountayne of
the pytche of
Bitumen

Quintus Curtius.

Bitumen of
Babylon.

founde of late in the prouince of *Panuco*, where it is much better then the other of *Cuba*, as I haue seene by experience in calkyng of *hyppes*. *Panuco.*

Of the lande of *Baccalaos*, called *Terra Baccalarum*, situate on the North syde of the firme lande.



Shortly after that your maiestie came to the citie of *Toledo*, there arriued in the moneth of *November*, *Steuen Gomes* the pilot, who the yere before of .1524. by the commaundement of your maiestie, sailed to þ North partes, and founde a great part of lande continuat from that which is called *Baccalaos*, discourlyng toward the West to the .xl. and .xli. degree, from whence he brought certayne *Indians* (for so call we all the nations of the newe found landes) of the which he brought some with him from thence, who are yet in *Toledo* at this present, and of greater stature then other of the firme lande, as they are commonly: they colour is muche lyke the other of the firme lande: they are great archers, and go couered with the skinnes of diuers beastes, both wylde and tame. In this lande are many excellent furies, as *Parterns*, *Sables*, and such other ryche furies, of the which the sayd pilot brought some with him into *Spayne*: they haue *spuer*, and *copper*, & certayne other metals: they are *Idolaters*, and honour the *Sonne* and *Moone*, and are seduced with such superstition and errours as are they of the firme. And to haue wypten thus much it may suffice, of suche thynges as haue seemed to me most worthy to be noted in the *Summarie* of *Gonzalus Ferdinandus*, wypten to *Themperours* maiestie.

Baccalaos.
Indians.
Spche furies and spuer.
Idolaters.

Particularly of newe *Spayne*, called *Novia Hispania*, or *Mexico*.



The *Spayne*, is that part of the continent or firme lande that lyeth West and South from the land of *Florida*: this was subdued to thempire of *Castile* by the ryght noble gentelman *Ferdinando Cortese* þ *marquesse* of the bale of *Quaraca*. In this lande are many prouinces, concepyng in them in
Si maner

Notable thynges

maner innumerable cities, among which, that is the chiefe whiche
 the Indians cal *Mexico*, or *Temixtitlan*, consyſtyng of more
 then ſiue hundred thousand inhabitauntes: It ſtandeth in the
 middelt of a lake of ſalte water, as doth *Venece* in the ſea, the
 lake conteyneth fourtie Perſian miles, called *Paraſange*, euery
 one conſyſting of .xxx. furlonges, and more, as ſome ſay. In theſe
 regions is found great plentie of gold, ſyluer, & pretious ſtones,
 with innumerable other thynges, both neceſſary for the lyfe of
 man, & pleaſant, as *Silke*, *Bombaſine cotton*, *Alame*, *Safferne*,
Woad, with diuers other thynges, wherwith cloth and *Silke* is
 dyed. There is alſo ſuch abundaunce of ſuger, that certayne Spa-
 niſh ſhippes are yeerely freighted therewith, and bryng the ſame
 into *Spaile*, from whence it is carped in maner to al partes of
Chriſtendome. The inhabitants of *Mexico* are ſubtile people, and
 vſe much craft in theyr bargaining: they haue not the vſe of gold
 and ſyluer mony, but vſe in the ſteade thereof the halfe ſhelles of
Almonds, which kind of Barbarous mony they cal *Cocoa*, or *Ca-
 canzate*. In maner al kinds of coyne are there very good cheape,
 eſpecially barley and whate. They haue great plentie of *Hartes*,
wylde Bozes, *Lions*, *Leopardes*, and *Tigers*, whiche beaſtes
 wander in maner in euery place. The region is moſt commodi-
 ous for haukyng and huntynge, for the great abundaunce it hath
 of beaſtes and ſoules: But the people exerciſe al theyr cunning
 in makynge the images of their idolatry, and in painting. Theyr
 women are valiant, and ſumptuous in theyr apparell, and other
 tygements: for they ſo rychely frynge and beſet the ſame with
 pearles, pretious ſtones, and golde, that nothyng can be more
 excellent: they haue a kynde of paper greatly differing from
 ours, in this they expreſſe their mindes by certayne figures, for
 they haue not otherwyſe theſe of letters. The nation is deſpous
 of warre, and doth not long keepe the conditions of peace un-
 uiolated: but deſpeth rather in ciuile and moſt cruell battayle
 among them ſelues, then to liue in peace and quietneſſe. Such
 as in the warres fal by any meanes into the handes of theyr eni-
 mies, eſther by ſubmyſſion or otherwyſe, are partly ſacrifyſed
 to the *Idoles*, and the reſydue geuen to the ſouldiers to be eaten,
 in lyke maner as we rewarde dogges and haukes with part of
 theyr pray. They haue innumerable *Idoles*, whiche euery one
 maketh

The citie of
Mexico, or Te-
mexitlan.

Golde and
ſyluer.

Silke.
Cotton.
Alame.
Woad.
Suger.

Shelles for
mony.

Coyne.
Beaſtes.

Haukyng and
huntynge.

Apparell.

Womans
trouilly appa-
rell.

A warlike na-
tion.

Captines ſa-
crifyſed to
Idoles.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

maketh for his particuler god, after the phantasse of his owne
brayne, and geueth therto diuine honour, albeit at this day they
do by litle and litle leaue of theyr barbarous spercenesse, & with
our religion embrace better maners: For they nowe professe
the fayth of Christ, and in his name pray vnto God the Father.

Of Peru.



The prouince called *Peru*, was also named
Nona Castilia, by them that first founde it.
This region is the West part of *America*,
and is situate in the longitude of .290. de-
grees, proce. ding from the West to the
East, and Southward begynneth syue de-
grees beyonde the Equinoctiall line, and
is extended very farre into the South. This is taken to be the
rychest land in golde, siluer, pearles, precious stones, and spices,
that euer was founde yet to this day. For gold is there in suche
plentie that they make pyssots therof, and other vessels applied
to sutch vses. But this is moze to be marueyled at, that in a citie
called *Collio* was founde a house al covered with massie plates of
gold. In theyr warres also theyr harnesse is of gold and siluer.
Theyr weapons are bowes, arrowes, slyngs, darts, and pykes.
The inhabitauntes are warrellyke people, and of great agilitie.
They haue cities defended with lawes and armes. The region
is exceeding fruitfull, and yeldeth corne twyse in the yeere. It is
so flooythynge with many fayre woods, mountaynes, rpuers, and
other both pleasaunt & necessarie commodities, that it seemeth in
a maner an earthly Paradise: it hath diuers kynds of beastes, and
yet none hurtful, or of rauenyng kynde. Theyr sheepe are of
suche heyghe, that they vse them in steede of Horses: some wyte
that they are as bygge as the young Holes of Camelles, and
that theyr wooll is verpe softe and syne: also that the Swis
byng soozth Lambes twyse a yeere. The people are wyttie,
and of gentle behauiour, cunnyng also in artes, saythfull of pro-
mise, and of maners not greatly to be discommended, saue only
that they are ignoant of Christ, who neuerthelesse is now know-
en vnto them in many places, as our hope is he shalbe daylie
moze

Peru is the
rychest land
that is know-
en.

A house comes
red with golde.

Harnesse of
golde.

A fruitfull
region.

Great sheepe.

The dutie of
Christian
Princes.

Notable thynges

more and more, yf all Princes wpll herein put theyr helpynge handes to the plowe of our Lozde, and send labourers into his vineyarde.

Of the great ryuer called *Rio de la Plata* (that is) the ryuer of siluer.



This ryuer reacheth very farre in length & breadth, and is called *Vruai*, in the Indian tongue. Into this falleth an other ryuer named *Paraué*. The first that sayled into the ryuer of *Plata*, was *Iohn Dias Solis*, whom the ryght noble kyng of Spaine *Ferdinandus* made Admirall of these seas. In the

ryuer lyeth an Ilande whiche *Iohn Dias* named *Martinus Gratias*, because a pilot of his, so called, was buried there. This Ilande is situate in the myddest of the ryuer, and is distant from the mouth of the same about fourtie leagues. As the sayde Admirall attempted to expugne the Ilande, he was sodenly oppressed and slayne of the Indians that pryncipe assailed hym. Therewith neuerthelesse they barbarous crueltie was not satisfied vntyll they had tozned hym in peeces, and deuoured hym: But many yeeres after, the Emperours *Waleste*, and Kyng of Spayne *Charles* the syfte, sent forth *Sebastian Cabot* (a man of great courage & skylful in Cosmographie, and of no lesse experience as concernyng the Starrs of the sea) with commaundement to discouer and subdue the Indians of *Tbarsis*, *Ophir*, *Cipango*, and *Coi Catbai*. Recepyng therefore his commission, and procedyng forwarde on his viage, he arriued by chaunce at this Ilande: the cause whereof was, that the pryncipall vessell was lost by *shypwacke*, and the men that saued theyr lyues by *swymmyng* were recepued into our *shyppes*. Percepyng therefore that by reason of this chaunce he coulde by no meanes perourne his viage attempted, he entended to expugne the sayde Ilande, and thereupon to comeygh his victuals to land, to prepare his souldiers to the inuasion, to plant colonies, & to erect fortresses by the riuers side, wherby the Spaniards might be defended from the violence of the Barbarians. But before he attempted this, he was aduertised that the Ilande was rich in gold & siluer, which thing did so encorage him, that

without

Paraué.

John Dias Solis.
The Ilande Martinus Gratias.

The viage of Sebastian Cabot to the ryuer of Plata.
Charles.
Ophir.
Cipango.
Carpay.

Without respecte of peryl he thought best to expugne it by one meancs or other, wherein his boldnesse tooke good effecte, as often tymes chaunceth in great assayes. Furthermoze as touchyng the ryuer, *Sebastian Cabote* made relation, that he neuer sawe any comparable unto this in breadyth and deapth: For whereas it falleth into the sea, it conteyneth .xxv. leagues in breadyth. From the mouth of the ryuer, *Cabote* sailed by the same into the lande for the space of thzee hundred and fiftie leagues, as he wytteth in his owne carde. That it is of great deapth, may hereby be consydered, that many great ryuers fall into it, so that the chanell can not be shalowe that conteyneth such aboundance of water, and suche plentye of good and great fyshes: For there is in maner no fysh in the sea, that is not founde in this ryuer. Alsoone as the Spanyarde were set alande, they made a pprooffe if the soyle were fruitefull to beare coyne. Takynge therefore fiftie graynes of wheate, and committynge the same to the earth in the moneth of September, they geathered thereof two thousand and fiftie at December next folowynge: (wherin some being deceyued and mistakynge the thyng, haue wyitten in the steade of two thousande and fiftie, fiftie thousande and two:) the lyke fertilitie is there of all other grayne and pulle. Furthermoze thynhabitauntes declared, that not farre from that place, there are great and hygh mountaynes, in the which is founde great plentye of golde: and no great distance from the same, to be other mountaynes no lesse fruitefull of syluer, and many other thinges, long to rehearse. Thynhabitauntes are paynesfull men, and tyll the grounde diligently, wherein they take great pleasure, and haue therefore great plentye of bread of *Mairzum*. There are sheepe of such byggnesse, that they compare them to young Camels or Asses, as some say: theyr wooll is very fine, and nearest unto the fynnesse of sylke. There are also beastes of diuers kyndes. Among men there is this difference, that such as liue in the mountaynes, are whyte, and for the most part lyke unto the men of our regions: but they that dwell aboute the ryuer (as though they tooke theyr colour thereof) are blackyshe, or purple, of the coloure of fine Iron or Steele. This also chaunceth to many of them, that theyr feete and legges are lyke the legges and feete of the foule called the *Dystreche*.

The ryuer of Plata.

Marueplous fruitefulness.

Mountaynes conteynyng golde and syluer.

Great sheepe.

Theyr colour.

Men with deformed legges.

¶ iii Of

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

453

Notable thynges

Of the landes of *Laborador* and *Baccalaos*, lying
west and northwest from England, and be-
ing part of the firme lande of the
VVest Indies.



Any haue traueyled to searcho the coaste of
the lande of *Laborador*, aswell to thintent to
knowe howe farre or whyther it reacheth,
as also whether there be any passage by sea
through the same into the sea of *Smy* and the
Ilandes of Molucca, whiche are vnder the
Equinoctiall lyne, thynkynge that the way
thither should greatly be shortened by this viage. The *Spany-
ardes*, as to whose ryght the sayde *Ilandes of spices* parteyne,
dyd fyrst seeke to fynde the same by this way. The *Portugales*
also hauynge the trade of spices in theyr handes, dyd trauaile to
fynde the same, although hitherto neyther any suche passage is
founde, or the ende of that lande. In the yere a thousande and
foure hundredeth, *Gasper Cortesreales*, made a viage thither with
two *Carauelles*, but found not the streight or passage he sought.
At his being there, he named the *Ilands* that lye in the mouth
of y^e gulfe *Quadrado*, after his name *Cortesreales*, lying in the sy-
tic degree, and more, & brought from that land about threescore
men for slaues: He greatly marueyled to behold the huge quan-
titye of snowe & Ice, for the sea is there frozen exceedingly. *Thin-
habitanes* are men of good corporature, although tawny lyke
the *Indies*, and laborious: They paynt theyr bodies, and weare
braselettes and hoopess of syluer and copper: theyr apparell is
made of the skynnes of *Barternes*, & dyuers other beastes, whi-
che they weare with the heare inwarde in winter, and outwarde
in sommer. This apparell they gyde to theyr bodies with
gyrdels made of cotton, or the synewes of fyshes and beastes.
They eate fysh more then any other thyng, and especially *Dal-
mons*, although they haue foules and fruite. They make theyr
houses of tyMBER, whereof they haue great plenty: and in the
steepe of tiles, couer them with the skynnes of fyshes and beastes.
It is sayde also that there are *Gryfes* in this lande, and that the
Bears and many other beastes and foules are wyche. To this
and

The way to
the *Ilandes of
Molucca* by the
north sea.

The *Spany-
ardes*.

*Gasper Cor-
tesreales*.

*Insula Cortes-
reales*,
Snowe and
Ice.

Furres.

Fyshes.

Gryfes,
Bears.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

and the Mandes about the same, the Britons are accustomed to resort, as men of nature agreeable unto them, and bozne vnder the same altitude and temperature. The Portugayes also sayled thither with the pilot called *Iohn Scoluo*, and the Englyshe men with *Sebastian Cabot*.

The Britons;
Sebastian Cabot.

The coaste of the lande of *Baccallaos*, is a great tract, and the greatest altitude thereof is .xlviii. degrees and a halfe. *Sebastian Cabot* was the first that brought any knowlrdge of this land. For being in England in the dayes of kyng *Henry the seventh*, he furnished two shippes at his owne charges, or (as some say) at the kynges, whom he perswaded that a passage myght be founde to *Cathay* by the North seas, and that spycies myght be brought from thence sooner by that way then by the vlage the Portugales vse by the sea of *Sur*. He went also to knowe what maner of landes those Indies were to inhabite. He had with hym three hundred men, and directed his course by the tract of *Islande*, vpon the *Cape of Laborador* at fyfite and eight degrees, affirming that in the moneth of *July* there was such cold, & heapes of *Ice*, that he durst passe no further: also that the dayes were very long, and in maner without nyght, and the nyghtes very cleare. Certaine it is, that at the threescore degrees, the longest day is of eighteene houres. But considering the cold, and the strangenesse of the vnknown lande, he turned his course from thence to the West, folowing the coast of the land of *Baccallaos* vnto the thirtie & eight degrees, from whence he returned to Englande. To conclude, the Britons and Danes, haue sayled to the *Baccallaos*, and *Iaques Cartier* a french man was there twice with three Galeons: as one in the yeere .xxiiii. and the other in the .xxv. and chose the land to inhabite from the .xv. degrees to the .li. being as good a land as *Fraunce*, and all thynges therein commune to suche as first possesse the same. Of these landes, *Iacobus Gastaldus* wytteth thus. The new land of *Baccallaos*, is a colde region, whose inhabitauntes are Idolatours, and praye to the *Sonne* and *Moone*, and byuers *Idoles*: they are whyte people, and verye rusticall, for they eate fleshe and fysh and all other thynges rawe. Sometymes also they eate mans fleshe pyntlie, so that they *Cacique* haue no knowelodge thereof. The apparel of both the men and women, is made of *Beares* skynnes, although they

The lande of Baccallaos.

The vlage of Cabot in the dayes of kyng Henry the seventh.

Ice in July.

Baccallaos.

Britons, Danes, Iaquos Cartier.

The people of Baccallaos.

¶

haue

Notable thynges

have Sables and Parternes, not greatie esteemed, because they are litle. Some of them go naked in Sommer, and weare apparrell only in winter. The Britons and Frenchmen are accustomed to take fysh in the coastes of these landes, where is founde great plentie of Tunnies, which inhabitants cal *Baccallaos*, wherof the land was so named. Northward from the region of *Baccallaos*, is the lande of *Laborador*, all full of mountaynes and great woods, in which are many Beares & wild Bores. The inhabitants are Idolatours, and warlike people, apparelled as are they of *Baccallaos*. In al this new land, is neyther citie or castell, but they lyue in companies like herdes of beastes.

Fyshing for
Tunnies.
Labrador,

The discovering of the land of *Florida*.

John Vonce.
Water of great
vertue, of this
reade in the
Decades.



The governour of the Ilande of *Boriquena*, John Vonce of Leon, beyng discharged of his office, and very ryche, furnished & sent forth two Carauels to seeke the Ilands of *Boiuca*, in the which the Indians affirmed to be a fountayne or spring whose water is so vertue to make old men young. Whyle

he trauallyed syre monethes, with outragious desire among many Ilandes to fynde that he sought, and coulde fynde no token of any suche fountayne, he entred into *Bemini*, and discouered the lande of *Florida*, in the yeere 1512. on Easter day, whiche the Spaniards cal the flopphing day of *Pascha*. wherby they named that lande *Florida*. And supposyng that great ryches myght be brought from thence, he returned into *Spayne*, and coucnanted with king *Ferdinando*, as touchyng the trade: and by the intercession of *Nicolas de Ouando*, and *Peter Nunnez de Gusman*, the kyng byd not only make hym governour of *Bemini* and *Florida*, but also sent forth with hym thre shyppes from *Sciulle* towards his second biage, in the yeere 1515. He touched in the Ilande of *Guaccana*, otherwysse called *Gnadalupea*, and sent to lande certayne of his men with the Laundresses of the shyppes: whom the *Canibales* (lying in ambushe) assailed with theyr inuenedomed arrowes, and slaying the most part, caried away the women. With this euill beginning, John Vonce departed from hence to *Boriquen*, and from thence to *Florida*, where he went
alands

Bemini,

Guaccana.

The *Canis*
bales.

Boyngton.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

alande with his souldyers, to espie a place most commodious to inhabite and plant a colonie: But the Indians commyng forth agaynst him to defende the entrance, assailed the Spanyarden fiercely, and slue and wounded many of them. At whiche conflict also hee him selfe, beyng wounded with an arrowe, dyed shortly after in the Ilande of *Cuba*: and so endyng his lyfe, consumed a great parte of the rycheesse hee had before gotten at *Saint Iohans of Boriquen*. This *John Ponce* had before sayled with *Christopher Colon* to the Ilande of *Hispaniola* in the yeere 1493. Hee was a gentle souldyer in the warres of this Ilande, and captayne of the prouince of *Higwei* for *Nicolas de Ouardo* that conquested the same. The region of *Florida* is a poynt or cape of lande reachyng into the sea lyke vnto a tongue, beyng a famous and notorious place among the Indians, by reason of many Spanyarden that haue been slayne there. But whereas by fame this *Florida* was esteemed a ryche lande, many valiant and noble men desyred the conquest thereof, among whom *Ferdinando de Soto* (who had before been a captayne in *Pernu*, and greatly inryched by the imprisonment of kyng *Atabaliba*) attempted a viage thither with a good bande of men, and spent spue yeeres in seekyng of golde mynes, supposyng that this land had been lyke vnto *Pernu*. In fine, hee dyed there, and was the destruction and vndoing of all that went with him, without inhabytyng that lande; in the whiche the conquestours had hitherto neuer good successe, forasmuche as these Indians are valiant archers, and strong & hardy men. But the valiant myndes of the Spanyarden not discouraged by these misadventures, after the death of *Ferdinando Soto*, many woorthie gentlemen desyred this conquest in the yeere 1544. among whom was *Iulian Samano*, and *Peter de Abumada*, beyng betherne, and men of sufficient abilitie for such an enterpryse. But neyther the Emperour beyng then in *Germanie*, neyther the prince *Don Philip* his son, who gouerned all the kyngdomes of *Castile* and *Aragonie*, neyther yet the counsaile of the Indies, would in any case agree to the conquest. Neuerthelesse, not bitterly contemnyng the matter, which they were partly perswaded myght otherwyle be brought to passe, they sent thither *Fryer Luys*, Cancell of *Baluastro*, with other Fryers of the order of *Saint Dominike*, who offered them selues

The death of
John Ponce.

The lande of
Florida.

Ferdinando
de Soto.

The valiant
myndes of the
Spanyarden.

The thyrd at-
tempt of the
conquest of
Florida.

Certaine Fry-
ers attempt the
conquest onely
wyllyng to
but wyllyng
successe.

selues

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

457

Notable thynges

schmes to conuert the nations of that lande from theyr gentilitie to the sayth of Christ, and obedience to the Emperour, onely with wordes. The Fryer therefore going forwarde on his viage at the kynges charges, in the yeere. 1549. went aland with foure other Fryers which he tooke with him, and certayne maryners, without harnesse or weapons: vnto whom as he began his preaching, many of the Indians of the sayde Florida resorted to the sea syde, where without gpyng audience to his wordes, they carryed him away, with three other of his companions, and dyd eate them, whereby they suffred martyrdome for the sayth of Christ: the residue that escaped, made hast to the shyppe, and kept them selues for confessours, as some say. Many that fauour the intent of the Fryers, doe nowe consider that by that meanes the Indians could not be brought to our friendship and religion: neuerthelesse, that if it could so haue been brought to passe, it had been better. There came of late from that shyppe, one that had been the page of *Ferdinando de Soto*, who declared that the Indians hanged by the skynnes, with the heades and crownes of the sayd Fryers in one of theyr Temples.

The Fryers
are rapine and
eaten.

Manye kynde
of disgracynge.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

FOR. M. CAP. FVR BY-
SHERS PASSAGE BY THE
NORTHVVEST.

OF CHINA IN CATHAYO, SITYATED
IN THE EAST SIDE OF
GREAT ASY.

OF THE ILAND GIAPAN, AND OTHER
LITTLE ILES IN TTE EAST OCEAN, BY
THE VVAY FROM CATHAYO
TO THE MOLVCCAES.

BY RICHARDE WILLES.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

For M. Captayne Furbers passage by the Northwest.
 To the ryght honourable and vertuous Ladie, the
 Lady Anne, Countesse of VVarwyke.



Dure famous wayes there be spoken of to those fruitfull and wealthye Ilandes, we doe vsually call *Moluccaes*, continually haunted for gayne, and dayly traueyled for ryches therein growyng. These Ilandes although they stand East from our Meridian, distant almost halfe the length of the world, in extreme heate, vnder the Equinoctial lync, possessed of Indolles and Barbares: yet by our neyghbours great aboundaunce of wealth there is paynfully sought, in respect of the voyage decreely bought, and from thence daungerously brought home vnto vs. Our neyghbours I call the *Portugalles* in comparison of the *Moluccbians* for neerenesse vnto vs, for lyke situation westwarde as we haue, for theyr vsuall trade with vs, for that the farre South: afterlynges doe know this parte of Europe by no other name then *Portugall*, not greatly acquaynted as yet with the other nations thereof. Theyr voyage is well vnderstoode of all men, and the Southeasterne way rounde about *Affrike* by the cape of *Good hope*, moze spoken of, better knowne & traueyled than that it may seeme needefull to discourse thereof any further.

1. By the south
east.

2. By the south
west.

The seconde way lyeth South-west, betwixt the West Indie or South America, and the South continent, though that narrow streite where *Magellanus* first of all men that euer we doe reade of, passed these later yeeres, leauing therevnto therfoze his name. This way no doubt the *Spanyarde*s would commo- diously take, for that it lyeth neare vnto their dominions there, could the Easterne current and leuant wyndes as easly suffer them to returne, as speedly therewith they may be carryed thither: for the which difficultie or rather impossibilitie of striuing agaynst the force both of wynde and streame, this passage is little or nothyng vled, although it be very well knowne.

3. By the north
east.

The thyrde way by the North-east, beyonde all Europe and *Asie*, that woorthie and renowned knight *sir Hugh Willoughby* sought

ought to his perill, enforced there to end his life for colde, congealed and frozen to death. And truly this may consist rather in the imagination of Geographers, than allowable either in reason, or approued by experience, as wel it may appeare by the dangerous trending of the North Cape set by *Ortelius* vnder the eight degree North, by the wretched sayling in that Northern sea alwayes cladde with Ice and Snow, or at the least continually pestered therewith, if happely it be at any tyme dissolved: besides bayes & shelves, the water warring more shallow towardes the East, that we say nothyng of the foule mystes and darke fogs in the colde climate, of the little power of the Sunne to cleare the ayre, of the vncomfortable nyghtes, so neare the Pole, syue monethes long.

Ortel. tab. Asia. 3.

A fourth way to goe vnto these aforesayde happy Ilandes *Molucca*, by *Humphrey Gilberte*, a learned and valiant Knight, discourseth of at large in his new passage to *Cathayo*, and was attempted the last yeere by your Ho. seruant. *W. Cap. Furber*, presently taking vpon him with his company fully to discover the same, and is now, if I be not deceyued, ready for his voyage. The enterpryse of it selfe being vertuous, the facte must doubtlesse deserue bygh prayse, and whansoever it shall be finished, the fruites thereof can not be small: where vertue is guide, there is fame a follower, and fortune a Companion. But the way is dangerous, the passage vncertaine, the voyage not thoroughly knowne, and therefore gaynesayde by many, after this maner.

4. By the Southwest.

First, who can assure vs of any passage rather by the Northwest, than by the Northeast? doe not both wayes lye in equall distance from the North pole? stande not the North capes of eyther continent vnder lyke elevation? Is not the Ocean sea beyonde *America* farther distant from our Meridian by 30. or 40. degrees West, than the extreme pointes of *Cathayo* Eastward, if *Ortelius* generall Carde of the world be true? In the Northeast that noble Knight *Sir Hugh Willongby* perished for golde: and can you than promyse a passenger any better hay by the Northwest? who hath gone for triall sake, at any tyme, this way out of *Europe* to *Cathayo*?

Ob. 1.

In Theatra.

If you seeke the aduyle herein of such as make profession in Cosmographie, Ptolome, the father of Geographie, and his eldest

Ob. 2.

best chosen, will answer by their *Mappes* with a negative, concluding moste of the sea within the land, and making an end of the world northward, neare the 36. degree. The same opinion, when learning chiefly flourish, was received in the Romanes time, as by their *Poetes* *improges* it may appeare: *Et te coles vicina Thule*, says *Virgile*, being of opinion, that *Iselard* was the extreme parte of the world habitable towarde the North. *Ioseph Moletius* an Italian, and *Mercator* a Germane, for knowledge men able to be compared with the best *Geographers* of our time, the one in his halfe *Sphaeres* of the whole worlde, the other in some of his great *Globes*, haue continued the *West Indische lande*, even to the North Pole, and consequently, cut of all passage by sea that way.

The same *Doctors*, *Mercator* in other of his *Globes* and *Mappes*, *Moletius* in his sea carde, neuertheless doubting of so great continuance of the former continent, haue opened a goulph betwixt the *West Indies* and the extreme northerne lande: but such a one, that ether is not to be troubled for the causes in the first *Objection* alleaged, or cleane shut up from vs in *Europe* by *Greenland*: the South ende whereof *Moletius* maketh firme lande with *America*, the north parte continent with *Lapponlande* and *Arctoway*.

Ob. 3.

Thyrdly, the greatest fauourers of this voyage, can not deny but that if any such passage be, it lyeth subiect vnto *Ple* and snow for the most parte of the yeere, whereas it standeth in the edge of the frostie Zone. Before the *Sunne* hath warmed the ayre, and dissolved the *Ple*, eche one well knoweth that there can be no sayling: the *Ple* once broken through the continuall abode, the *Sunne* maketh a certayne season in those partes: how shall it be possible for so weak a vessel as a *shyppe* is, to holde out any whole *Winter*, as it were, of *Ple* continually bearyng on eche syde, and at the mouth of that goulph, slipping downe furiously from the North, safely to passe, when whole mountaynes of *Ple* and snow haue tumbled downe vpon her.

Ob. 4.

Well, graunt the *West Indies* not to continue continent vnto the Pole, graunt there be a passage betwixt these two landes, let the goulph be neare vs than commonly in cardes we fynde it set, namely, betwixt the 61. & 64. degrees north, as *Genius Frisius* in his

his Mappes and Globes imagineth it, and is left by our countryman *Sebastian Cabote*, in his table, the which my good Lord your father hath at *Cheynes*, and so tryed this last yeere by your Honours seruaint as hee reported, and his carde and compasse doe witnesse. Let the way bee boyde of all difficulties, yet doeth it not folowe that we haue free passage to *Cathay*. For examples sake. You may trende all *Norway*, *Finnmark*, and *Lapponlande*, and than bow Southwards to *sainct Nicolas* in *Moscovia*: you may lyke wyse in the *Mediterranean* sea fetch *Constantinople*, and the mouth of *Tanais*: yet is there no passage by sea through *Moscovia*, into *Pont Euxine*, now called *Mare Maggiore*. Agayne, in the aforesayde *Mediterranean* sea, we sayle to *Alexandria* in *Egypt*, the *Barbares* byng theyr pebble and spices from the *Moluccas* by the reard sea and *Arabian* gonyph to *Sues*, scarcely thre dayes tourney from the aforesayde hauen: yet haue we no way by sea, from *Alexandria* to the *Moluccas*, for that *Isthmos* or litle streicte of lande betwyxt the two seas. In lyke maner, although the northerne passage bee free at 61. degrees latitude, and the *West Ocean* beyonde *America*, usually called *Mar del Zur*, knowne to be open at 40. degrees elevation, for the *Ilande Giapan*, yea, 300. leagues northerly aboue *Giapan*: yet may there bee lande to hynder the through passage that way by sea, as in the examples aforesayde it falleth out, *Asia* and *America* there byng ioyned together in one continent. He can this opinion seeme altogether frivolous vnto any one that diligently peruseth our *Cosmographers* doynages. *Iosephus Moletius* is of that mynde, not onely in his playne hemispheres of the worlde, but also in his sea carde. The *French Geographers* in lyke maner, bee of the same opinion, as by their *Mappe* cut out in forme of a harte you may perceyue: as though the *West Indies* were parte of *Asia*. Whiche sentence well agreeth with that olde conclusion in the scholes. *Quidquid præter Africam et Europam est, Asia est.* Whatsoeuer land doeth neyther appertayne vnto *Africke* nor to *Europe*, is parte of *Asia*.

Further-

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

5. 2b.

Furthermore it were to small purpose to make so long, so paynefull, so doubtfull a voyage by such a new founde way, if in *Cathayo* you should neyther be successe to lande for silkes and siluer, nor able to fetch the *Molucca* spices and pearle for pirace in those seas. Of a lawe demping all Aliens to enter into *China*, and forbidding all the inhabiters vnder a great penaltie to let in any stranger into that countreys, shall you reade in the reposit of *Galeotto Perers* there imprisoned with other Portugalkes: as also in the *Giaponische* letters, howe for that cause the woorthie trauepler *Xanixus* bargayned with a Barbarian Parchaunt for a great sum of Pepper to be brought into *Cantan*, a pozte in *Cathayo*. The great and daungerous piracie vled in that seas, no man can be ignorant of, that listeth to reade the *Giaponische* and *East Indian* historie.

Ob. 6.

Finally, all this great labour would bee lost, all these charges spent in vayne, if in the ende our traueplers myght not be able to returne agayne, and byng safely home into theyr owne natyue countrey, that wealth and riches, they in foreyne regions with aduenture of goodes, and daunger of theyr luyes, haue sought for. By the Northeast there is no way, the Southeast passage the Portugalkes doe hold, as Lodes of that seas. At the Southwest *Magellanus* experience hath partly taught vs, and partly we are perswaded by reason, howe the Easterne current streyeth so furiously on that stricte, and falleth with such force into that narrow grouppe, that hardely any shyppe can returne that way, into our *West Ocean*, out of *Mar del Zur*. The which, if it be true, as truly it is, than may we say, that the aforesayde Easterne current or leuant course of waters continually following after the heavenly motions, looseth not alwaye rather his force, but is doubled rather by an other current from out the Northeast, in the passage betwixt *America* and the *North lande*, whither it is of necessitie carryed: hauing none other way to moue, it falleth in circular motion, and consequently the force and fury thereof to be no lesse in the stricte of *Anian*, wher it stretcheth South into *Mar del Zur*, beyond *America* (if any such stricte of sea there be) than in *Magellans* strete both strictes being of lyke breadth: as in *Belogmine Zaltorius* table of new France, and in *Don Diego Hermans di Toledo* his carde for navigation in that region we doe fynde precisely

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

cisely set downe.

Nevertheless to approue that there iseth a way to *Cathays* at the Northwest, from out of Europe, we haue experyence, namely of thre brethren that went that iourney, as *Gemma Frisius* recordeth, and left a name vnto that streite, whereby nowe it is called *Fretum trium Fratrum*. We do reade againe of a Portugall that passed this streite, of whom *P. Furbisher* speaketh, that was imprisoned therefore many yeeres in *Lesbona*. to verifie the olde Spanysh prouerbe, I suffer for do-
 yng wel. Likewise *An. Vrdaneta* a sreyer of *Mexico* came out of *Mar del Zur* this way into *Germanie*: his Carde, for he was a great discoverer, made by his owne experyence and trauayle in that voyage, hath been scene by gentelmen of good credite.

Now yf the obseruation and remembrance of thyngs breedeth experyence, and of experyence proceedeth art, and the certeine knowledg we haue in al faculties, as y best Philosophers that euer were do affyrm: truly the voyage of these aforesayd trauail-
 lers that haue gone out of Europe into *Mar del Zur*, and retur-
 ned thence at the Northwest, doo moste evidently conclude that way to be nauigable, and that passage free. So much the more we are so to thynke, for that the fynde principle and chiefe grounde in all Geographie, as great *Peolome* sayth, is the histo-
 rie of trauel, that is, reportes made by trauaylers skylfull in Ge-
 ometrie & Astronomie, of al suche thinges in their iourney as to Geographie do belong. It only then remaineth, that we now an-
 swere to those argumentes that seemed to make against this
 former conclusion.

Cic. i. de orat.
Arist. pri.
Metaph.

Lib. i. Geog.
Cap. 2.

Sol. i.

The fynde obiection is of no force, that generall table of the worlde set forth by *Ortelius* or *Mercator*, for it greatly skil-
 leth not, being vnkylfully drawn for that poynt: as manifest-
 ly it may appeare vnto any one that conferreth the same with
Gemma Frisius vniuersal mappe, with his round quartered carde.
 with his globe, with *Sobastian Cabota* his table, and *Ortelius* ge-
 nerall Dappe alone, worthily preferred in this case before all
Mercator and *Ortelius* other doinges: for that *Cabota* was not
 only a skilful sea man, but a long trauayler, & such a one as entred
 personally that streite, sent by king *Henry* the seuenth to make
 this aforesayd discovery, as in his owne discourse of nauigation

Thi you

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

you may reade in his carde drawn with his owne hande, the mouth of the northwesternne Strait lieth neare the 318. Peruvian, betwixt .61. and .64. degrees in eleuation, continuing the same breadth about .10 degrees west, where it openeth southerly more and more, vntill it come vnder the tropike of Cancer, and so runneth into *Mar del Zur*, at the least .18. degrees more in breadth there, then it was where it first began: otherwyle I coulde as well imagine this passage to be more vnkely then the voyage to *Mosconia*, and more impossible then it for the farre situation and continuance thereof in þ frosty climas: nowe I can affyrme it to be very possible and most lykely in comparison thereof, for that it nether coasteth so farre north as the *Mosconian* passage doth, nether is this streete so long as that, before it bowe downe southerly towardes the Sonne agayne.

Sol. 2.

The seconde argument concludeth noching. *Toleme* knewe not what was aboue .16. degrees south beyonde the equinoctiall lyne, he was ignozant of all passages northwarde from the eleuation of .63. he knewe no Ocean sea beyonde *Asia*, yet haue the *Portugalles* trended þ Cape of good hope at the south poynte of *Afrike*, and traauyled to *Giapan* an *Ilande* in the east Ocean, betwixt *Asia* & *America*: our marchants in þ time of king Edward the fyr discovered the *Mosconian* passage farther north then *Tbule*, and shewed *Groenlande* not to be continent with *Lapponlande*, and *Norway*: the lyke our northwesternne traauylers haue done, declaring, by theyr nauigation that way, the ignozance of all *Cosmographers* that ether do ioyne *Groenlande* with *America*, or continue the west *Indies* with that frosty region vnder the north pole. As for *Virgil* he sauge accordingly to þ knowledge of men in his time, as an other Poete dyd of the hotte Zone.

Oued. 1. Met. 4.

Quarum quæ media est, non est habitabilis æstu. Imaginyng, as most men then dyd, *Zonam torridam*, the hot Zone, to be altogether dishabited for heat, though presently we knowe many famous and worthy kingdomes and cities in that part of the earth, and the *Iland* of *Saint Thomas* neare *Aethiopia*, and the welch *Ilands* for the which chiefly al these voyages are taken in hande, to be inhabited euen vnder the equinoctiall lyne.

Sol. 3.

To answer the third obiection, besides *Cabots* & al other traauylers nauigations, þ only credit of *M. Furbisher* may suffice, who
latly

lately throug h al these Ilands of Ise, and mountaines of snowe, passed that way, euen beyond the gulphe that tumbleth downe from the North, and in some places though he were one ynche thick Ise, as he returning in August dyd, came home safelpe agayne.

The fourth argument is alsoe rather frivolous & bayne, for neyther is there any isthmus or stret of land betwixt *America* and *Asia*, ne can these two landes toynly be one continent. The first part of my answer is manifestly allowed of by *Homer*, whom that excellent Geographer *Strabo* foloweth, pelyng hym in this facultie the pisse. The aucthour of that booke tykwyle περικοσμου to *Alexander*, attributed vnto *Aristotle*, is of y same opinion, that *Homer* and *Strabo* be of, in two or thre places. *Dionysius* in οικυμένης περιήγησι hath this verse. ὡτως ὠκεανὸς περιπέσσει γαίαν ἅπασαν. So dooth the Ocean sea runne rounde about the worlde: speakyng only of *Europe*, *Africke*, and *Asie*, as then *Asie* was traueyled & knowen. With these Doctoures may you ioyne *Pomponius Mela*, Cap. 2. lib. 1. *Plinius* lib. 2. Cap. 67. and *Pins*. 2. Cap. 2. in his description of *Asie*. All the whiche wryters do no lesse confirme the whole Easterne side of *Asie* to be compassed about with sea, then *Plato* doth affirme in *Timæo*, vnder the name *Atlantide*, the West Indies to be an Ilande, as in a speciall discourse thereof. *R. Eden* writeth, agreable vnto the sentence of *Proclus*, *Marsilius Ficinus*, and others. Out of *Plato* it is gathered that *America* is an Ilande. *Homer*, *Strabo*, *Aristotle*, *Dionysius*, *Mela*, *Plinie*, *Pins* 2. affirme the continent of *Asie*, *Afrike*, and *Europe*, to be emironned with the Ocean. I may therefore boldly say, though later intelligences therof had we none at all, that *Asie* and the West Indies, be not tied together by any isthmus or stret of land, contrary to the opinion of some new Cosmographers, by whom doubtfully this matter hath been brought in controuersie. And thus muche for the first part of my answer vnto the fourth obiection.

The second part, namely that *America* & *Asie* cannot be one continent, may thus be prooued. κατατρύτης γῆς κοιλότητα *Melior*. ἢ καὶ τοῦ ποταμῶν το πλῆθος. The most tructs take downe that way their course, where the earth is most holowe & deepe.

Ph. ii.

wryteth

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

deepest Trench: and the sea, saye be in the same place, as it
 goeth farther, so is it founde deeper. Into what groupbe do the
 Polscoidan riuers *Ouzga, Quins, Oby, and Iba,* poune out their
 streames? Northward out of *Mosconia* into the sea. Whi-
 che way dooth that sea stryke? The South is mayne lande,
 the Easterne coast waxeth more and more shalowe: from the
 North, ether naturally, because that part of the earth is higher
Aristot. 2. met. c. 1. of necessitie, say that the forcible influence
 of some Northerne Decares causeth the earth there to shake of
 the sea, as some philosophers do thynke: or finally say the great
 slope of waters engendred in that frostie and cold clyme, that the
 banches are not able to holde them. *Alber. in 2. Metea. Cap. 6.*
 From the North I say, continually collecte vnto me great abun-
 dance of water. So that this Northeasterne current must at the
 length abruptly bowe toward vs South on the West syde of
Fynmarke and *Norwaye:* or els stryke vnto me South west about
Groneland, or betwixt *Groneland* and *Iseland,* into the North west
 streit we speake of, as of congruence it doth, if you marke the
 situation of that region, and by the report of *P. Furbisher,* ex-
 perience teacheth vs. And *P. Furbisher* the further he traue-
 led in the former passage, as he tolde me, the deeper alwayes he
 founde sea. Lay you now the sum hereof together. The riuers
 runne where the Channels are most hollow, the sea in taking his
 course waxeth deeper, the sea waters fall continuallye from the
 North Southward, the Northeasterne current striketh downe
 into the streit we speake of, & is there augmented with whole
 mountains of Ice & snow, falling downe furiously out from þe land
 vnder þe North Pole. Where slope of water is, there is it a thing
 impossible to want sea, where sea not only doth not want, but
 waxeth deeper, ther can be discovered no land. Finally, whence I
 pray you came the contrary tyde, that *P. Furbisher* met withal
 after that he had sayled no small way in that passage, if there be
 any isthmus or streit of land betwixt the aforesaid North west-
 sterne gulfe and *Mar del Zur,* to ioyne *Asia* and *America* togetha-
 ther? That conclusion frequented in scholes *Quidquid preter &c.*
 was ment of the partes of the worlde then knowen, and so is
 it of ryghte to be understood.

Plin. lib. 2.
Cap. 67.

Sol. 5.

The fifth objection requireth for answer, wylsome and po-
 llicke,

need, in the traueller. to win the Barbarres fauour by some good
 meanes: and so to arme & strengthen him selfe, that when he shall
 haue the repulse in one coast, he may safely trauaile to another,
 commodiously taking his conuenient times, & discreetly making
 choise of them with whom he will thoroughly deale. To force a
 violent entrie, would for vs Englishmen be very hard, consi-
 dering the strength and valour of so great a nation, soe dis-
 stant from vs, and the attempt thereof might be most perill-
 lous vnto the doers, vntill they part were verie good. Cou-
 ching theyr lawes agaynst strangers, you shall reade ne-
 uertheless in the same relations of *Galcosto Perera*, that the *Ca-*
sbaian kyng is wont to graunt free access vnto all forreiners
 that trade into his countrey for marchandise, and a place of li-
 bertie for them to remaine in: as the Popes had, vntill such time
 as they had brought the *Louisa* or *Leutenant* of that coast to
 be a circumscribed *Maracene*: wherefore some of them were put
 to the sword, the rest were scattered abrode: at *Fugilen*, a great
 citie in *China*, certayne of them are yet this day to be seen. As
 for the *Giapan*, they be most desirous to be acquainted with
 strangers. The Portugals though they were straightly hand-
 led there at the first, yet in the ende they founde great fauour at
 the prince his hands, inso much that the *Louisa* or president that
 misused them, was therefore put to death. The rude *Tuich Ca-*
noa halleth that seas, the Portugals, the *Maracenes*, & Popes
 traueled continually by & downe that reache from *Giapan* to *Chi-*
na, from *China* to *Malacca*, from *Malacca* to the *Moluccas*: and
 what an Englishman, better appointed then any of them al (that I
 say no more of our name) feare to saile in that Ocean? What seas
 at al doo want piracie? what navigation is there boyde of perill?
 To the last argument. Our trauepiers neede not to let he their
 retorne by the north east, ne shall they be constrayned, except
 they first, either to attempte *Magellans* streete at the South-
 west, or to be in daunger of the Portugals for the South east:
 they may retorne by the north west, that same way they do go
 south, as experience hath shewed. The reason alleged for
 prooffe of the contrary, may be disproued after this manner. And
 first, it may be called in controuersie, whether any current con-
 tinually be forced by the motion of *Primum mobile*, rounde about

Sal. 6.

By us the

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

*Luc. lib. 1.
Phar. sal.*

*What the
easterne cur-
rant is.*

the worlde, or no? for learned men do diuersely handle that question. The naturall course of all waters is downewarde, wherefoze of congruence they fall that way where they fynde the earth most lo we anddeepe: in respecte whereof, it was erst sayde, the seas to strike from the *Nozthen* landes Southerly. Violently the seas are tossed and troubled diuerse wayes with the wyndes, encreased and diminished by the course of the Moone, hopped by and downe through the sundrye operations of the Sonne and the Starres: finally some be of opinion, that the seas be carried in part violently about y^e worlde after the daily motion of the highest mouable heauen, in lyke maner as y^e elementes of ayre and fyre, with the rest of the heauenly spheres are, from the east vnto the west. And this they do call they^r easterne currant, or leuant streame. Some suche currant may not be denied to be of great foze in the hote Zone, for the nearnes thereof vnto the centre of the Sonne and blustryng easterne wyndes violently dpyuing the seas westwarde: howbeit in the temperate climes, the Sonne beyng farther of, and the wyndes moze diuerse, blowyng as muche from the north, the west, and south, as from the east, this rule doth not effectually withholde vs from traueplyng eastwarde, ne be we kepte euer backe by the aforesayde *Leuante* wyndes and streame. But in *Magellane* streict we are violently dzyuen backe westwarde: Ergo through the *Nozthwesternne* streicte or *Anian* fret shall we not be able to returne eastwarde: it soloweth not. The fyyst, for that the northwesternne streicte hath moze sea rome at the least by one hundred Englyshe myles, then *Magellane* fret hath, the onely want wherof causeth all narrowe passages generally to be most violent. So woulde I say in *Anian* gulfe, if it were so narrowe as *Dan Diego* and *Zalterins* haue paynted it out, any returne that way to be ful of difficulties, in respect of such streictnes therof, not for the nearnes of the Sonne, or easterne wyndes, violently forceing that way any leuant streame. But in that place there is moze sea rome by many degrees, if the cardes of *Cabota*, and *Gemma Frisius*, and that whiche *Tramezino* imprinted, be true.

And hycherto reason see I none at all, but that I may as well geue credyt vnto they^r doynge, as to any of the rest. It must be *Peregrinations historia*, that is, true reportes of skilful traauilers,

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

as *Proleme* writeth, that in suche controuersies of *Geographie* must put vs out of doubt. *Ortelius* in his vniuersall tables, in *Lib. 1. Geog.* his particuler *Mappes* of the west *Indies*, of all *Asia*, of the *Cap. 2.* northern kyngdomes, of the easie *Indies*, *Mercator* in some of his globes, and generall mappes of the worlde, *Moletius* in his vniuersall table of the *Globe* diuided, in his sea carde, and particuler tables of the *East Indies*, *Zalterius*, and *Don Diego*, with *Fernando Bertely*, and others, do so much differ both from *Genms Frisius* and *Cabota*, among them selues, & in diuers places from them selues, concerning the diuers situation and sundry limittes of *America*, that one may not so rashly, as truely surmise, these men either to be ignorant in those pointes touching the aforesayd region, or that the mappes they haue geuen out vnto the worlde, were collected only by them. & neuer of their owne drawing. *M. Furbers* prosperous voyage, and happy returne, wyl absolutely decide these controuersies, and certainly determine where the whole passage lieth, how long it is, what breadth it carrieth, how perillous, how prosperous the toyney is, and what commodities the paynfull traualer can reape thereby. What gaine the venterous marchant may looke for, what wealth, what honour, what fame wyl to our *Englyshe* nation thereof ensue.

Thus muche, right honorable, my verie good Lady, of your question concerning your seruantes voyage. If not so spiritually as I would, and was desirous fully to do, at the least as I could, & leasure suffered me, for the litle knowledge God hath lent me, yf it be any at all, in *Cosmographie* and *Philosophie*, and the small experyence I haue in traualle. Chosing rather in the cleare iudgement of your Ho. mynde to appeare rude and ignorant, and so to be seene vnto the multitude, then to be founde vntankefull and carelesse in any thing your Ho. shoulde commaunde me. God preserve your Honour. At the Court the .xx. of Marche.

Your Ho. most humbly at
commaundment.

Richard Willes.

(.)

Ph. iiii.

To the

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

To the right wor- shipfull, my singular good

Mystres, M. Elizabeth
Morisyu.



*O*ur Indian readings, our Asian lectures, our
Geographical description of the whole world,
wyl I end with certayne reportes of the pro-
uince China in Cathayo, and some intelli-
gences of the worthy Ilands lying thereby in
the East Ocean. The relation whereof,
though at the first myght seeme briefly to be
passed ouer, and in a fewe substantiall poyntes only to be touched,
as in the rest of our discourses concernyng this facultie we haue
done: Yet the worthynesse of matter herein conteyned, the order of ci-
uile gouernment, the maners & fashions of the inhabitants, the dis-
cription of that countrey, so wel gathered the noueltie thereof in our
language, haue effectually moued me to doo the whole discourse into
Englysh. Needlesse I graunt the labour is for you, that perfectly in so
fewe Monethes, so fewe weekes, so fewe dayes, learned the Italian
tongue, out of the whiche language this translation is made. The
singular care you euer haue had of my well dooing, and the
speciall fauour I haue founde among your Honorable frendes for
your sake, woulde not only not let me to play the negligent Poete in
the first Act, but compelled me to handle euen the last Scene more a-
bundantly: as wel to acknowledge your good skill both in Cosmogra-
phie, and in forreine languages, as also to testifie vnto the world, the
great benefites the whiche I haue receyued for vsbering, as it were
herein, so good, so wyse, so vertuous, so worshipfull a mystres.
Nowe after all these learned exercises of your younger yeeres, God

Almyghtie send you great good sucresse in your present affaires,
with increase of prosperitie and muche bonour,

as you desyly shall grow elder,

At London the 21. of February. 1576.

Your seruaunt euer.

R. Willes.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Certayne reportes of the prouince *China*, learned through the Portugalles there imprisoned, and chiefly by the relation of *Galeotto Perera*, a gentleman of good credit, that lay prisoner in that countrey many yeeres. Done out of Italian into Englyshe, by

R. W.



This land of *China* is parted into 13. shyes, the which sometymes were eche one a kyngdome by it selfe, but these many yeeres they haue been all subiect vnto one Kyng. *Fuquien Fuquien*. is made by the Portugalles the first shyre, bycause there their troubles began, and had occasion thereby to know the rest. In this shyre be viii. cities, but one principally more famous than others, called *Fuquico*, the other seuen are reasonably great, the best known wherof vnto the Portugalles is *Cincoo*, in respect of a certayne haueu *Cincoo* topning thervnto, whycher in tyme past they were wont for merchandysse to resort.

Cantan is the second shyre, not so great in quantitie, as well *Cantan* accounted of, both by the Kyng thereof, and also by the Portugalles, for that it lyeth nearer vnto *Malacca* than any other part of *China*, and was first discryed by the Portugalles before any other shyre in that prouince: this shyre hath in it seuen cities.

Chequeam is the thirde shyre, the chiefest cite therein is *Dou- Chequeam* sbion, therein also standeth *Liampo*, with other thirtene or fouertiene Boroughes: countrey townes therein to so many to be spoken of.

The fourth shyre is called *Xutiansu*, the principall cite ther- *Xutiansu* of is great *Pachin*, where the Kyng is alwayes resident. In it are thirtene other very great cities: of other townes therein, and Boroughes well walled and trenched about, I will say nothing.

The fyft shyre hath name *Cbelim*: the great cite *Nanquin*. *Cbelim* chief of other thirtene cities was herein of auncient tyme, the royall

royall seate of the *Chinise* kynges . From this tityle, and from that aforesayde *Chiquiam* forwarde, bare rule the other kynges, vntyll the whole region became one kyngdome.

Quianci.
rather *Quinzi*

The sixt tityle beareth name *Quianci*, as also the principall cite thereof, wherein the fine claye to make vesselles is wrought. The *Portugalles* being ignorant of this countrey, and syndyng great aboundaunce of that fine claye to be solde at *Liampo*, and that very good cheape, thought at the first that it had been made there, howbeit in fine, they perceiued that the standing of *Quinzi* moze neare vnto *Liampo* than to *Cinco* or *Cantan*, was the cause of so muche fine claye at *Liampo*: within the compasse of *Quinzi* tityle be other . 12. cities.

The seuenth tityle is *Quicin*, the eight *Quansi*, the nienth *Confu*, the tenth *Vrnan*, the eleuenth *Sichina*. In the first hereof there be . 16. cities, in the next titylene: howe many townes the other three haue, we are ignorant as yet, as also of the proper names of the . 12. and . 13. tityles, and the townes therein.

This finally may be generally sayde heereof, that the greater tityles in *China* prouince, may be compared with mightie kyngdomes.

In eche one of these tityles be set *Ponchiassini* and *Anchiasini*, before whom are handled the matters of other cities. There is also placed in eche one a *Tutan*, as you would say a gouernor, and a *Chian*, that is a visiter, as it were: whose office is to goe in circuit, and to see iustice exactly done . By these meanes so vpryghtly thinges are ordered there, that it may bee worthely accounted one of the best gouerned prouinces in all the world.

Pachin.al.
Pachang.

The Kyng maketh alwayes his abode in the great cite *Pachin*, as muche to say in our language as by the name thereof I am aduertised, the towne of the kyngdome . This kyngdome is so large, that vnder syue monethes you are not able to traueyle from the townes by the sea syde to the Court and backe agayne, no not vnder thre monethes in poste at your vrgent busynesse . The posthouses in this countrey are litle of bodie, but swyfte of foote . Many doe traueyle the greater parte of this iourney by water in certayne lycht barkes, for the multitude of ryuers commodious for passage from one cite to another.

The

The kyng, notwithstanding the hugeness of his kyngdome, hath such a care thereof, that every Hoone (by the Hoones they reckon their monethes) he is aduertised fully of whatsoeuer thing happeneth therein, by these meanes folowynge.

The whole prouince being diuided into syles, and eche syle hauing in it one chiefe and principall citie, whereunto the matters of all the other cities, townes, and Boroughes, are brought: there are drawen, in every chiefe citie aforesayde, intelligences of suche thinges as doe monethly fall out, and be sent in writing to the Court. If happely in one moneth euery post is not able to goe so long a way, yet doeth there notwithstanding once every moneth arryue one poste out of the syle. Who so commeth before the newe Hoone, stayeth for the deliuey of his letters vntyll the Hoone be chaunged. Then lykewyse are dispatched other postes, backe into all the .13. syles agayne.

Before that we doe come to *Cinco* we haue to passe through many places, and some of great importance. For this countrey is so well inhabited neare the sea syde, that you can not go one myle but you shall see some towne, Borough, or Postry, the which are so abundantly prouided of all thinges, that in the cities & townes they liue ciuilly. Neuertheles such as dwel abrode are very pooze, for the multitude of them euery where so great, that out of a tree you shall see many tymes swarme a number of chyldren, where a man would not haue thought to haue founde any one at all.

From these places in number infinite, you shall come vnto two cities very populose, and being compared with *Cinco*, not possibly to be discerned which is the greater of them. These cities are as well walled as any cities in all the worlde. As you come in to eyther of them, standeth so great and mightie a bydge, that the lyke thereof I haue neuer scene in Portugall nor els where. I heard one of my felowes say, that he told in one bydge .40. arches. The occasion wherfore these bydges are made so great, is for that the countrey is toward the sea very plaine and low, & ouerwhelmed euer as the sea water encreaseeth. The breadth of the bydges, although it bee well proportioned vnto the length therof, yet are they equally buylt, no higher in the middle than at eyther end, in such wyse that you may directly see from the one end to the other, the sydes are wonderfully well engraued after the
manner

maner of Rome workes. But that wee did most marueyle at, was therewithall the hugenesse of þe stones, the lyke wherof as we came in to the cite, we dyd see many set by in places dishabited by the way, to no small charges of theys, howbeit to litle purpose, whereas no body seeth them but such as doe come bye. The arches are not made after our fashion, haunted with sundry stones set togeather: but paued, as it were, whole stones reaching from one pillar to an other, in suche wyse that they lye both for the arches heades, and galantly serue also for the hygh waye. I haue been assumed to beholde the hugenesse of these aforesayde stones, some of them are .xii. pases long and bywarde, the least a .xi. good pases long, and an halfe.

The wayes eche where are galantly paued with fouresquare stone, except it be where for want of stone they vse to laye dycker. In this voyage wee traueyled ouer certayne hilles, where the wayes were pitched, and in many places no wyse paued than in the playne grounde. This causeth vs to thinke, that in all the worlde there be no better workemen for buildinges, than the inhabitants of *China*.

The countrey is so well inhabited, that no one foote of ground is left vntilled: small stowe of cattell haue we seene this way, we sawe onely certayne Oxen wherewithall the countrymen doe plough theyr grounde. One Oxe draweth the plough alone, not onely in this shyre, but in other places also, wherein is greater stowe of cattell. These countrymen by arte doe that in cyllage, which we are constrained to doe by force. Here be solde the vopdinges of close stooles, although there wanteth not the dunge of beastes: & the excrements of man are good marchandise throughout all *China*. The dungfarmers seeke in euery streete by exchange to buye this vurtie ware for hearbes and wooth. The custome is very good for keepyng the cite cleane. There is great abundance of Venmes, Geese, Duckes, Swyne, and Goates, Whethers haue they none: the Venmes are solde by weight, and so are all other thinges. Two pounce of Venmes fleshe, Goose, or Ducks, is woorth two *Fol* of their money, that is, v. ob. sterling. Swines fleshe is solde at a peny the pounce. Beefe beareth the same pryce, for the scarcitie thereof, howbeit Northwarde from *Enquier*, & farther off from the sea coast, there is Beefe more plentie,

tie and solde better cheape, Beefe onely excepted, great aboundance of all other viandes we haue had in all the cities we passed through. And if this countrey were lyke vnto India, the inhabitants whereof eate neyther Venise, beefe, nor porke, but keepe that onely for the Portugalles and Moores, they would be solde here for nothyng. But it so falling out, that the *Chineans* are the greatest eaters in all the world, they doe feede vppon all thinges, specially on porke, the fatter that is, vnto them the lesse lothsome. The highest price of these thinges aforesayde, I haue set downe, better cheape shall you sometymes buye them for the great plenty thereof in this countrey. Frogges are solde at the same price that is made of Venises, and are good meate amongst them, as also Dogges, Cattes, Rattes, Snakes, and all other vncleane meates.

The cities be very gallant, specially neare vnto the gates, the which are marueylously great, & couered with Iron. The gate-houses buylt on hygh with Towers, the lower parte thereof, is made of brycke and stone, proportionally with the walles, from the walles vppward, the buyldyng is of tymber, and many stoyes in it one aboue the other. The strength of theyr townes is in the mightie walles and ditches, artillerie haue they none.

The streetes in *Cinco*, and in all the rest of the cities we haue seene are very layre, so large and so streight, that it is wonderfull to beholde. Theyr houses are buylt with tymber, the foundati- ons onely excepted, the which are layde with stone, in eche syde of the streetes are paynteles or continuall porches for the marchantes to walke vnder: the breadth of the streete is neuertheless such, that in them .xv. men may ryde commodiously syde by syde. As they ryde they must needes passe vnder many hygh arches of triumph that crosse ouer the streetes made of tymber, and carued diuersely, couered with tyle of fine claye: vnder these arches the Mercers doe vtter theyr smaller wares, and such as lyst to stande there, are defended from rayne and the heate of the Sunne. The greater gentlemen haue these arches at their doores: although some of them be not so myghtyly buylt as the rest.

I shall haue occasion to speake of a certayne order of gentlemen that are called *Loutoa*. I will first therefore expounde what this woerde signifieth. *Loutoa* is as muche to say in our language *Loutoa*
as

Faint, illegible text, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. The text is arranged in several paragraphs and is mostly obscured by blurring and low contrast.

as *Syr*, and when any of them calleth his name, he is wereth *Syr*: and as we doe say, that the kyng hath made a gentleman, so say they, that there is made a *Loutea*. And for that amongst them the degrees are diuers both in name and office, I will tell you onely of some principalles, beyng not able to aduertise you of all.

The maner howe gentlemen are created *Louteas*, and doe come to that honour and title, is by the gpyng of a broad gyble not like to the rest, & a cap, at the commaundement of the kyng. The name *Loutea* is moze generall and common vnto moe, than equalitie of honour therby signified, agreeth withall. Such *Louteas* that doe serue their pynce in weightie matters for iustice, are created after triall made of their learning: but the other whiche serue in smaller affayres, as Capitaynes, Constables, Sergeantes by lande and sea, Recepuers, and such lyke, wherof there be in every cite, as also in this, very many, are made for sauour: the chiefe *Louteas* are serued kneelyng.

The whole prouince *China* is diuided, as I haue sayde, into thirtiene shypes, in every shype at the least is one gouernour called there *Tutan*. in some shypes there be two.

Chian, al.
Chien.

Chiefe in office nexte vnto them be certayne other named *Chians*, that is, bygh Commissioners as you would say, or visiters, with full aucthoritie in suche wyse, that they doe call vnto an accompt the *Tutans* them selues, but their aucthoritie lasteth not in any shype longer than one yeere. Neuerthelesse in every shype beyng at the least seuen cities, yea, in some of them fiftiene or sixtiene, beside other Boroughes & towne not well to be numbred, these visiters, where they come, are so honoured and feared, as though they were some great pynces. At the yeeres ende their circuit done, they come vnto that cite which is chiefe of others in the shype, to doe iustice there: finally busyng them selues in the searching out of such as are to receyue the order of *Louteas*, wherof moze shall be sayde in an other place.

Ponchiassi.

ouer and besydes these officers, in the chiefe cite of eche one of these aforesayde thirtiene prouinces, is resident one *Ponchiassi*, Capitayne thereof, and Treasurer of all the kynges reuenues. This *Pagistrats* maketh his abode in one of the foure greatest

best houses that be in all these head cities. And although the principall parte of his function be, to be Capitayne, to be Treasurer of the reuenues in that prouince, to sende these reuenues at appoynted tymes to the Court: yet hath he notwithstanding by his office also to meddle with matters apperteynyng vnto iustyce.

In the seconde great house dwelleth an other Magistrate called *Anchiaffi*, a great officer also, for he hath dealynges in all matters of iustice. Who although hee bee somewhat inferior in dignitie vnto the *Ponchiaffi*, yet for his great dealynges and generall charge of iustice, whosoever seeth the assayes of the one house and the other, myght iudge this *Anchiaffi* to be the greater.

Anchiaffi.
al. Hexaffi.

Tuzi, an other officer so called, lyeth in the thyrde house, a magistrate of importance, specially in thinges belongyng vnto warfare, for thereof hath he charge.

Tuzi.

There is resident in the fourth house a fourth officer, bearyng name *Taijfu*. In this house is the principall prysen of all the citie. Eche one of these Magistrates aforesayde may both laye euyll doers in prysen, and deliuer them out agayne, except the facte be heynous and of importance: in suche a case they can doe nothing, except they doe meete altogether. And if the deede deserue death, all they together can not determine thereof, without recourse made vnto the *Chian* wheresoever he bee, or to the *Tuan*: and if it falleth out, that the case be referred vnto hygher power. In all cities, not onely chiefe in eche shtye, but in the rest also, are meanes founde to make *Lontes*: Many of them doe studie at the prince his charges, wherfore at the peeres ende they resort vnto the head cities, whither the *Chians* doe come, as it hath beene earst sayde, as well to geue these degrees, as to sit in iudgement ouer the prysoners.

Taijfu.

The *Chians* goe in circuit euery peere, but suche as are to be chosen to the greatest offices, meete not but from three peeres to three peeres, and that in certayne large halles appoynted for them to be examined in. Many thinges are asked them, wherunto if they doe aunswere accordingly, and be found sufficient to take their degree, the *Chian* by and by graunteth it them: wherby the *Cappe* & gyrdle wherby they are knowen to be *Lontes*, they

Licentiates.

weare

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Doctours.

Dutch lphs.

weare not before that they be confirmed by the kyng. They examina-
tion done, and tryall made of them, such as haue taken their
degree went to be giuen them with all ceremonies, vse to banquet
and feast many dayes together (as the *Chineans* fashon is to enioy
all their pleasures with eatyng and drynkyng) and so remayne
chosen to doe the kyng seruice in matters of learnyng. The o-
ther examynates founde insufficient to procede, are sent backe to
their studie againe. Whose ignorance is perceiued to come of
negligence & default, such a one is whipped, and sometymes sent
to pylson, where wee lyeing that yeece whan this kynde of acte
was, we found many thus punished, and demaundyng the cause
therof, they sayde it was for that they knew not howe to ans were
vnto certayne thinges asked them. It is a woerde to see howe
these *Louteas* are serued and feared, in suche wise, that in publyke
assemblies at one shyfte they gyue, all the seruitors belongyng
vnto iustice, tremble thereat. At their being in these places, whan
they lyst to moue, be it but euen to the gate, these seruitors do take
them by, and carry them in seates of beaten golde. After this soyt
are they bozne whan they goe in the citie, eyther for their owne
businessse abrode, or to see eche other at home. For the dignitie
they haue, and office they doe beare, they be al accompanied: the
very meaneest of them all that goeth in these seates is vbered by
two men at the least, that cry vnto the people to gyue place, how-
beit, they neede it not, for that reuerence the comon people hath
vnto them. They haue also in theyr company certayne *Serge-
antes*, with their *Daces* eyther siluered, or altogetheer siluer,
some two, some foure, other six, other eight, conueniently for eche
one his degree. The moze princypall and chiefe *Louteas* haue go-
ing orderly before these *Sergeantes*, many other with stauies,
and a great many catchpoules with roddees of *Indische* canes,
dragged on the grounde, so that the streetes beyng paued, you
may heare a farre of as well the noyle of the roddees, as the voyce
of the cryers. These felowes serue also to apphehende others, and
the better to be knowen they weare livery redde gurdles, and in
their cappes *Pecockes* feathers. Behynde these *Louteas* come
such as doe beare certayne tables hanged at stauies endes, where-
in is wrytten in siluer letters the name, degree, and office of that
Loutea. whom they folowe. In lyke maner they haue bozne after
them

them hattes agreeable vnto theyr cydes: if the *Loues* be meane, then hath he brought after hym but one hatter, and that may not be pealowe: but if he be of the better sorte, then may he haue two, thre, or foure: the principall and chiefe *Loues*, may haue all theyr hattes pealowe, the which among them is accompted great honour. The *Loues* for warren, although he be but meane, may notwithstanding haue pealowe hattes. The *Tutanes* and *Chians*, when they goe abroad, haue besides all this before them ledde .3. or .4. horses with theyr garde in armoz. Furthermoze the *Loues*, pea and all the people of *China*, are woonte to eat theyr meat syttyng on stooles at hygh tables as we do, and that very cleanly, although they vse neither table clothes nor napkyns. Whatsoeuer is set downe vppon the boorde, is first carued, before that it be brought in: they seede with two slykes, refraynyng from touchyng theyr meate with theyr handes, euen as we do with forkes, for þ which respect, they lesse do neede any table clothes. As is the nation onely ciuil at meate, but also in conuersation, and in courtesie they seeme to exceede all other. Likewise in theyr dealynges, after their maner, they are so ready, that they farre passe all other *Gentyles* and *Moones*: the greater states are so bayne, that they lyne theyr clothes with the best syke that may be founde. The *Loues*, are an idle generation, without all maner of exercises and pastymes, excepte it be eatyng and drynkynge. Sometymes they walke abroad in the feldes, to make the souldyars shoot at pyckes with theyr bowes, but theyr eatyng passeth: they wyll stande eatyng euen when the other do drawe to shoote. The pycke is a great blanket spread on certayne long poles, he that stryketh it, hath of the best man there standyng a peece of crymson cassata, the whiche is layd about his head: in this sorte the wpmers honoured, and the *Loues* with theyr bellyes full, retorne home agayne. The inhabitants of *China*, be very great *Idolaters*, all generally do wooshypp the heauens: and as we are woont to saye, God knoweth it: so saye they at euerie worde, *Tien Tante*, that is to saye, The heaucns do knowe it. Some do wooshypp the *Sonne*, and some the *Moone*, as they thynke good, for none are bounde moze to one then to an other. In their temples, the which they do cal *Mesani*, they haue a great altar in þ same place

the, that is
the *Italians*
and *Spanis*
ardes.

¶ i.

as

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

After the
Dutch nation.

As we haue, true it is that one may goe rounde about it: There
set they vp the Image of a certayne *Lourea* of that countrey,
whom they haue in great reuerence for certaine notable thinges
he dyd. At the ryght hande standeth the deuyl, muche more vglye
paynted then we do vse to set hym out, whereunto great homage
is done by suche as come into the temple to aske counsell, or to
drawe lottes: this opinion they haue of hym, that he is malicious
and able to do euyl. If you aske them what they do thynke of the
soules departed, they wil answer, that they be immortall, and
that as soone as any one departeth out of this life, he becommeth
a deuyl if he haue liued well in this worlde, if oherwylse, that
the same deuyl chaungeth hym into a busse, ope, or dogge. Where-
fore to this deuyl do they muche honour, to hym do they sacrifice,
praying hym that he wyl make them lyke vnto hym selfe, and
not lyke other beastes. They haue mozeouer an other sorte of
temples, wherein both vppon the altars and also on the walles
do stande many *Idoles* well proportioned, but bare headed:
These beare name *Omitboson*, accompted of them spirites, but
suche as in heauen do nether good nor euyl, thought to be
suche men and women, as haue chastlye lpyed in this worlde
in abstinence from fysh and fleshe, fedde only with ryls & salaces.
Of that deuyl they make some accompte, for these spirites they
care litle or nothyng at all. Agayne they holde opinion that if
a man do well in this lyfe, the heauens wyl geue hym many
tempozall blessinges, but if he do euyl, then shall he haue infir-
mities, diseases, troubles, and penurie, and all this without
any knowledge of God. Finally, this people knoweth no other
thing then to liue & die, yet because they be reasonable creatures,
al seemed good vnto them we spake in our language, though it
were not very sufficient: our maner of praying especially pleased
them, and cruely they are wel ynough disposed to receiue the
knowledge of the truely. Our lorde graunte for his mercie all
thynges so to be disposed, that it may some tyme be brought to
passe, that so great a nation as this is, perthe not for wante of
helpe.

Our maner of praying so well lyked them, that in
pyson impozunately they besought vs to wyte for them
some

Some what as concernyng heauen, the whiche we byd to theyr contentacion with suche reasons as we knewe, howbeit not very cunningly. As they do theyr Idolatry they laugh at them selues. If at any tyme this countrey myght be ioined in league with the kyngdome of Portugale, in such wyse that free accesse were had to deale with the people there, they might al be soone conuerted. The greatest fault we do fynd in them is Sodomitie, a vice very common in the meaner sort, & nothing strange amongst the best. This sinne were it left of them, in all other thynges so well disposed they be, that a good interpretour in a short space myght do there great good, yf, as I sayde, the countrey were ioined in league with vs.

Furthermoze the *Louteas*, with al the people of *China*, are wont to solemnize the dayes of the newe and full Moones in disling one eache other, and makyng great bankettes, for to that end, as I earst sayd, do tend all theyr pastymes, and spendyng theyr daies in pleasure. They are wont also to solemnize eache one his byrth daye, whereunto theyr kynred and frendes do resorte of custome, with presentes of Iuelles or money, receyuyng a gayne for theyr rewarde good cheare. They keepe in lyke maner a general feast with great bankets that day theyr kyng was bozne. But theyr most principall and greatest feast of al, and best cheare, is the fyrst day of theyr newe yeere, namely the fyrst day of the newe Moone of Februarve, so that theyr fyrst moneth is Marche, and they reckon the tymes accordynglye, respect beyng had unto the reigne of theyr Prynces: as when anye dede is wyrtten, they date it thus, Hade suche a daye of suche a Moone, and such a yeere of the reigne of suche a Kyng. And theyr auncient wyrtynge beare date of the yeeres of this or that kyng.

Nowe wyll I speake of the maner the whiche the *Chineans* doo obserue in dooyng Justice, that it maye be knowen how farre these Gentyles doo herein exceede manye *Christians*, that be moze bounden then they to deale iustly and in trueth. Because the *Chynise* Kyng maketh his abode contynually in the Citie *Pachyn*, his kyngdome so great, the shyres so many, as tofoze it hath been sayde: in it therefore the Governours and Rulers, muche lyke unto our *Schryffes*, be so appointed

H. ii. sodently,

liberty and speedely discharged agayne, that they haue no tyme to growe naught. Furthermoze to keepe the state in moze securitie, the *Loureas* that gouerne one tynne, are chosen out of some other tynne distant farre of, where they must leaue theyr wyues, chyldren, and goodes, carryng nothyng with them but them selues. True it is, that at theyr commyng thither they do fynde in a rebynesse all thynges necessarie, theyr house, furniture, seruantes, and all other thynges in suche perfection and plenty, that they want nothyng. Thus the kyng is well serued without all feare of treason.

In the principall cities of the tynnes be foure cheefe *Loureas*, before whom are brought all matters of the inferiour towne, throughtout the whole realme. Diuers other *Loureas* haue the maneagynge of iustice, and recepyng of rentes, bounde to peche an accompte thereof vnto the greater officers. Other doo see that there be no euill rule kept in the cite: eache one as it becometh hym. Generally al these do imppson malefactours, cause them to be whynned & racked, hoping them by & done by the armes with a corde, a thyng very vsuall there, and accompted no shame. These *Loureas* do vse great diligence in þ apprehending of theues, so that it is a wonder to see a theefe escape away in any towne, cite, or village. Upon the sea neere vnto the tynne many are taken, and looke euen as they are taken, so be they synn whynned, and afterward layd in prison, where shortly after they all dye for hunger and colde. At that tyme, when we were in prison, there died of them about threescore and ten. If happily any one, haryng the meanes to great foode, do escape, he is set with the condemned persones, and prouided for as they be by the kyng, in such wyse as hereafter it shalbe sayde.

Theyr whynns be certayne peeces of canes, cleft in the middle, in such sort that they seeme rather playne then sharpe. He that is to be whynned lieth grouelong on the ground. Upon his thighes the Hangman layeth on blowes myghtely with these canes, that the standers by tremble at theyr crueltie. Ten stryppes drawe a great dzale of blood, twentie or thyrtye spoyle the fleshe altogether, fyttye or threescore wyll require long tyme to be healed, and if they come to the number of one hundred, then are they incurable.

The

The Italians
call it the *Strada*.

The *Louteas* obserue mozeouer this: when any man is brought before them to be examined, they aske hym openly in the hearing of as many as be present, be y^e offence neuer so great. Thus did they also behaue them selues with vs. For this cause amongst them can there be no false witness, as dayly amongst vs it falleth out. This good commeth therof, that many being alwaies about the iudge to heare the euidence, and beare witness, the processe can not be falsified, as it happeneth sometymes with vs. The *Portes*, *Gentiles*, & *Iewes*, haue al their sundry othes, y^e *Portes* doo sweare by theyr *Mosafos*, the *Brachmans* by theyr *Fili*, the rest like wise by the thynges they do worthyppe. The *Chineans* though they be wonte to sweare by heauen, by the *Moone*, by the *Sunne*, and by all theyr *Idolles*, in iudgement neuertheless they sweare not at all. If for some offence an othe be vled of any one, by and by with the least euidence he is tormented, so be the wytnesses he bypneteth, if they tell not the truth, or do in any poynt disagree, except they be men of worthyppe and credyte, who are beleued without any farther matter: the rest are made to confesse the trueth by foze of tormentes and whyppes. Besides this order obserued of them in examinations, they do feare so muche theyr kyng, and he where he maketh his abode keepeth them so lowe, that they dare not once styre. Agayne, these *Louteas* as great as they be, notwithstanding the multitude of *Notaries* they haue, not trusting any others, do write al great processees and matters of importance them selues. Mozeouer one vertue they haue worthy of great prayse, and that is, being men so well regarded and accompted of as though they were princes, they be patient aboue measure in geuyng audience. The poore straungers brought before them myght saye what we woulde, as all to be lyes and salaces that they dyd wypte, ne dyd we stande before them with the vsuall ceremonies of that countrey, yet dyd they beare with vs so patiently, that they caused vs to wonder, knowyng specially howe litle any aduocate or iudge is wonte in our countrey to beare with vs. For where so euer in any towne of *Christendome* shoulde be accused vnknewen men as we were, I knowe not what ende the very innocentes cause woulde haue: but we in a *Heathen* countrey, haupng our great ennimies two of the chiefest men in a whole towne,

It. iiii.

towne,

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

tolme, wantyng an interpreter, ignorant of that countrey language, byd in the ende see our great aduersaryes cast into ppyson for our sake, and deprivied of theyr offices and honoure for not doyng iustice, yea not to escape death, for as the rumoz goeth, they shalbe beheaded . Somewhat is nowe to be sayde of the lawes that I haue been hable to knowe in this countrey, and fyrst, no thefte or murder, is at any tyme pardoned : adulterers are put in ppyson, and the facte once proued, condemned to dye, the womans husbände must accuse them : this order is keapt with men and women found in that fault, but thecues and murderers are imprisoned as I haue sayd, where they shortly dye for hunger and colde . If any one happely escape by bypbyng the gayler to geue hym meate, his procelle goeth farther, and cometh to the courte where he is condemned to dye . Sentence byng geuen, the ppysoner is brought in publyke with a terrible bande of men that laye hym in Irons hande and foote, with a boorde at his necke one handefull broade, in length reachyng downe to his knees, cleft in two partes, and with a hole one handefull downewarde in the table fyr for his necke, the whiche they enclose by therein, naylyng the boorde fast togeather . one handefull of the boorde standeth by behynde in the necke : the sentence and cause wherefoze the fellow was condemned to dye, is wyten in that parte of the table that standeth before.

A ppyler
boorde.

This certimonie ended, he is laid in a great prison in the companie of some other condemned persons, the which are found by the king as long as they do liue. The boord aforesaid so made, tormenteth the ppysoners very much, keeping them both from rest, & eke lettyng them to eate comunodgully, theyr handes beyng manced in Irons under that boord, so þ in fine there is no remedy but death. In þ chiefe cittes of euery shire, as we haue erst said, there be foure pyncipal houses, in ech of them a ppyson: but in one of them where the *Taisu* maketh his abode, there is a greater & a moze pyncipal ppyson thē in any of þ rest : & although in euery citie there be many, neuerthelesse in thye of them remaine onely such as be condemned to die. Their death is much prolonged, for that ordinarily there is no execution doone but once a yeere, though many die for hunger and colde, as we haue seene in this ppyson. Execution is done in this maner. The *Cbian*, so wyte the
high

hygh commissioner of Lord cheefe Justice, at the yeeres ende goeth to the head citie, where he heareth agayne the causes of suche as be condemned. Many tymes he deliuereth some of them, declaring that boord to haue been wrongfully put about theyr neckes: the visitation ended, he chooseth out seuen or .viii. not many more or lesse, of the greatest malefactours, the whiche, to feare and keepe in awe the people, are brought into a great market place, where al the great *Louteas* meete together, and after many ceremonies and superstitions, as the vse of the countrey is, are beheaded. This is done once a yeere: who so escapeth that day, may be sure that he shal not be put to death al that yeere following, & so remaineth at the kynges charges in the greater prison. In that prison where we lay were al waies one hundred & moe of these condemned persons, besides them that lay in other prisons.

These prisons wherin the condemned captiues do remaine are so strong, that it hath not been hard, that any prisoner in al *China* hath escaped out of prison, for in deed it is a thyng impossible. The prisons are thus builded. First al the place is myghtely walled about, the walles be very strong and hygh, the gate of no lesse force: within it thre other gates, before you come where the prisoners do lye, there many great lodgings are to be seene of the *Louteas*, *Notaries*, *Partitions*, that is, such as do there keepe watch and ward day and nyght, the court large and paved, on the one syde wherof standeth a prison, with two myghtie gates, wherin are kept such prisoners as haue committed enomyous offences. This prison is so great, that in it are *Streates* and *Market places* wherein al thyngs necessarie are sold. Vea some prisoners liue by that kynde of trade, buying and selling, and letting out beds to hyre: some are dayly sent to prison, some dayly deliuered, wherfore this place is neuer voyde of seuen or eyght hundred men that go at liberte.

Into one other prison of condemned persons shal you goe at thre yron gates, the court paved and vaulted rounde about, & open aboue as it were a cloister. In this cloister be eight roomes with yron doores, and in each of them a large Gallerie, wherein euery night the prisoners do lie at length, their seete in the stocks, theyr bodie hampered in huge wooden grates that keepe them fast sitting, so that they lie as it were in a cage, sleepe if they can: in the morning they are loosed agayne, that they may go into the court.

A. lili.

Moc.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Notwithstanding the strength of this pylson, it is kept with a garrison of men, part whereof watche within the house, part of them in the Court, some keepe about the pylson with lanterns and watchebelles answering one an other fyue tymes euery nyght, and geuing warning so lowde, that the *Loutea* resting in a chamber not neare thereunto, may heere them. In these pylsons of condemned persons remaine some .15. other 20. yeeres imprisoned, not executed, for the loue of theyr honorable frendes that seeke to prolong theyr lyues. Many of these pylsoners be shomakers, and haue from the king a certayne allowaunce of rise: some of them worke for the keeper, who suffereth them to goe at libertie without letters and boordes, the better to worke. Howbeit when the *Loutea* calleth his checke rolle, & with the keeper bieweth them, they all weare theyr lyueres, that is, boords at theyr neckes, yronned hand and foote. When any of these pylsoners dieth, he is to be scene of the *Loutea* and *Notaries*, brought out at a gate so narrow, that there can but one be drawn out there at once. The pylsoner beyng brought forth, one of the aforesayde *Partians* stryketh hym thysle on the head with an yron sledge, that doone, he is deliuered vnto his frendes, yf he haue any, otherwysle the kyng byrth men to cary hym to his buriall in the fieldes.

Thus adulterers and theeuers are vsed. Such as be imprisoned for debt once knowen, lye there vntyl it be payed. The *Taitsu* or *Loutea* calleth them many tymes before him by the vertue of his office, who vnderstanding the cause wherefoze they doo not pay theyr debtes, appointeth them a certayne tyme to doe it, wthin the compasse wherof if they discharge not theyr debtes beyng debtors in deede, then they be whipped & condemned to perpetual imprisonment: yf the creditours be many, & one is to be payd before another, they do, contrary to our maner, pay him first, of whom they last borowed, and so ordinarily the rest, in suche sort that the first lender be the last recepuer. The same order is kept in paying legacies: the last named, recepueth his portion first. They accompt it nothyng to shew fauour to such a one as can doo the lyke agayne: but to doo good to them that haue litle or nothing, that is worth thanks, therfoze pay they the last before the first, for that their entent seemeth rather to be vertuous then gainful.

When

Of like the first
lenders be the
more welibier.

When I sayde that suche as bee committed to pryson for theft & murder, were iudged by the Court, I ment not them that were apprehended in the deed doyng, for they need no tryall, but are brought immediatly before the *Tutan*, who out of hand giueth sentence. Other not taken so openly, and doe neede tryall, are the ma'efactors put to execution once a yeere in the chiefe cities, to keepe in awe the people: or condemned, doe remaine in pryson, lokyng for theyr day. Theeues being taken, are carryed to pryson from one place to an other in a chest vpon mens shoulers, byed therfore by the kyng, the Chest is sixe handfulls hygh, the prysoner sitteth therein vpon a benche, the couer of the chest is two boordes, amyd them both a pifferpyke hole, for the prysoner his necke, there sitteth he with his head without the chest, & the rest of his body within, not able to moue or turne his head this way or that way, nor to plucke it in: the necessities of nature he voydeth at a hole in the bottome of the chest, the meat hee eateth is put into his mouth by others. There abydeth he day and nyght, buryng his whole iourney: if happely his porters stumble, or the chest doe logge, or be set downe carelesly, it turneth to his great paynes that sitteth therein, all such motions beyng vnto him hangyng as it were. Thus were our companions carryed from *Cinco*, seuen dayes iourney, neuer taking any rest as afterward they told vs, & theyr greatest griefe was to stave by the way: as soone as they came, beyng taken out of the chests, they were not able to stande on theyr feete, and two of them dyed shortly after.

When we laye in pryson at *Enquico*, we came many tymes abrode, and were brought to the pallaces of noble men, to be seene of them and theyr wyues, for that they had neuer seene any Portugall before. Many thinges they asked vs of our countrey, and our fashions, and dyd wypte euery thyng, for they be curious in nouelties aboute measure. The gentlemen shewe great curtesie vnto straungers, and so dyd we finde at their handes, and bycause that many tymes we were brought abrode into the citie, somewhat will I say of such thinges as I dyd see therein, beyng a gallant citie, and chiefe in one of the thirtiene thyres aforesayde.

The citie *Enquico*, is very great, and mightily walled with square stone both within and without, and as it may seeme by the bready thereof, filled vp in the middle with earth, layde ouer with

Enquico.

Hereof to folow.

with bricke and couered with tyle, after the maner of porches or galeries, that one myght dwell therein. The steyers they vse, are so easily made, that one may go them by and down a horsebacke, as eftsoones they doe: the streetes are paved, as already it hath been sayde: there be a great number of Merchantes, euery one hath written in a great table at his doore such thinges as he hath to sell. In lyke maner euery artificane paynteth out his craft: the market places be large, great aboundance of all thinges there be to be solde. The citie standeth vppon water, many streames run through it, the bankes pitched, and so broad that they serue for streetes to the cities vse. Ouer the streames are sundry byddges both of tymber & stone, that beyng made leuell with the streetes, hynder not the passage of the Barges to and fro, the chanelles are so deepe. Where the streames come in and goe out of the citie, bee certayne arches in the wall, there goe in and out theyr *Parai*, that is a kynde of Barges they haue, and this onely the day tyme: at nyght these arches are closed by with gates, so doe they shut by all the gates of the citie. These streames and Barges doe ennoble the very muche the citie, and make it as it were to seeme an other Venice. The buyldinges are euen, well made, hygh, not lofted, except it be some wherein merchandise is layde. It is a woerde to see howe great these cities are, and the cause is, for that the houses are buylt euen, as I haue sayde, and doe take a great deale of roome. One thyng we sawe in this citie that made vs all to wonder, and is woorthy to bee noted. Namely, ouer a porche at the commyng in to one of the afore-sayde foure houses, the whiche the kyng hath in euery tyme for his gouernours as I haue erst sayde, standeth a Colonne buylt vppon fourtie pylers, eche one whereof is but one stone, eche one fourtie handfulls or spannes long: in breadth or compasse twelue, as many of vs byd measure them. Besydes this, theyr greatnesse suche in one peece, that it myght seeme impossible to worke them: theyr bee mozeouer cornerde, and in colour, length, and breadth so lyke, that the one nothyng dyffereth from the other. This thyng made vs all to wonder verge muche.

Parai.

¶

Wee are wont to call this countrey *China*, and the people *Chineans*, but as long as we were prisoners, not bearing amongst them at any tyme that name, I determined to learne howe they were called: and asked sometymes by them thereof, for that they vnderstoode vs not when wee called them *Chineans*, I answered them that all the inhabitantes of India named them *Chineans*, wherefoze I prayed them that they would tell mee, for what occasion they are so called, whether peradventure any cite of theyrs bare that name . Wherevnto they alwayes answered mee, to haue no suche name, nor euer to haue had . Then dyd I aske them what name the whole countrey beareth, and what they would answer being asked of other nations what countrymen they were? It was tolde me that of auncient tyme in this countrey had been many kynges, and though presently it were all vnder one, eche kyngdome neuerthelesse enioyed that name it fyrst had, these kyngdomes are the prouinces I spake of before . In conclusion they sayde, that the whole countrey is called *Tamen*, and the inhabitantes *Tamegines*, so that this name *China* or *Chineans*, is not heard of in that countrey . I doe thinke that the nearenesse of an other prouince thereabout called *Cochinchina*, and the inhabitantes thereof *Cochinneses*, fyrst discovered before that *China* was, lying not farre from *Malacca*, dyd gyue occasion both to the one nation and to the other of that name *Chineans*, as also the whole countrey to be named *China* . But their proper name is that aforesayde.

Tamen the
proper name of
China.

I haue heard moreover that in the cite *Nanquin* remaineth a table of golde, and in it written a kyngs name, as a memory of that residence the kyngs were wont to keepe there. This table standeth in a great pallas, covered alwayes, except it bee in some of theyr festiuall dayes, at what tyme they are wont to let it be scene: covered neuerthelesse as it is, all the nobilitie of the cite goeth of duettie to doe it euery day reuerence . The lyke is done in the head cities of all the other shyres in the pallas of the *Ponchiafimi*, wherein these aforesayde tables doe stande with the kyng his name written in them, although no reuerence be done therunto but in solempne feastes.

I haue

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Pochang . al. I haue lykewyse vnderstood: that the citie *Pachin*, where the kyng maketh his abode, is so great, that to goe from one syde to the other, besydes the *Subarbes*, the which are greater than the citie it selfe, it requyret one whole day a horsebacke, going backe ny pale. In the *Subarbes* be many wealthy marchantes of all sortes. They tolde me furthermore that it was *Noted* about, and in the *Notes* great store of sylue, wherof the kyng maketh great gaynes.

They enemies It was also tolde mee that the kyng of *China* had no kyng to wage battayle withall, besydes the *Tartares*, with whom he had concluded a peace more than fourescore yeeres agoe. Neuertheless they frendshipp was not so great, that the one nation might marry with the other. And demaunding with whom they married, they sayde, that in olde tyme the *Chinish* kynges, when they would marry theyr daughters, accustomed to make a solemne feast, wherunto came all sortes of men. The daughter that was to be married, stode in a place where shee myght see them all, and looke whom shee lykedy best, him did shee chuse to husbnde, and if happely he were of a base condition, hee became by and by a gentleman: but this custome hath been left long since. Nowe a dayes the kyng marryeth his daughters at his owne pleasure, with great men of the same kyngdome: the lyke order he obserueth in the maryage of his sonnes.

**Maryage of
the kynges
children.**

They haue moreouer one thing very good, and that whiche made vs all to marueyle at them beyng *Gentiles*: namely, that there be hospitalles in all theyr cities, alwayes full of people, we neuer sawe any poore body begge. We therefore asked the cause of this: answered it was, that in euery citie there is a great ciuit, wherein be many houses for poore people, for blinde, lame, old folke, not able to traueyle for age, nor hauyng any other meanes to lyue. These folke haue in the aforesayde houses, euery plenty of rice duryng theyr lyues, but nothyng els. Such as be receyued into these houses, come in after this maner. When one is sicke, blinde, or lame, he maketh a supplication to the *Ponchiasii*, and prouyng that to be true he wyrteth, he remayneth in the aforesayde great lodgyng as long as he lyueth: besides this they keepe in these places *Stwyne* and *Hennes*, whereby the poore be releued without goyng a beggyng.

He speaketh
not here of all
China, but of
the cities, for in
other places
there be beg-
gers, as you
haue seene al-
ready, swar-
myng out of
trees.

I sayde

I sayd befoze that *China* was full of ryuers, but now I mynde to confyrme the same answere: for the farther we went into the countrey, the greater we found the ryuers. Sometymes we were so farre off from the sea, that where we came no sea fische had been seene, and salt was there very deere, of freshe water fische yet was there great aboundance, & that fisch very good: they keepe it good after this maner. Where the ryuers doe meete, and so passe into the sea, there lyceth great stoze of Boates, specially where no salte water commeth, and that in Marche and Apryll. These Boates are so many that it seemeth wonderfull, ne serue they for other than to take small fische. By the ryuers sydes they make leynes of fine and strong nettes, that lye three handfulls vnder water, and one aboue, to keepe and nourysh their fische in, vntyll suche tyme as other fischers doe come with Boates, bynggng for that purpose certayne great chestes lyncd with paper, able to holde water, wherem they carry theyr fische by and downe the ryuer, euery day renuyng the chest with freshe water, and sellngg theyr fische in euery citie, towne, and village, where they passe, vnto the people as they neede it: most of them haue nette leynes to keepe fische in alwayes for theyr prouision. Where the greater Boates can not passe any farther forwarde, they take lesser, and bycause the whole countrey is very well watered, there is so great plentie of ryuers sortes of fische, that it is wonderfull to see: assuredly we were amazed to beholde the maner of their prouision. Theyr fische is chiefly nourished with the dung of Buffles and Oxen, that greatly fatteth it. Although I sayde theyr fischyng to be in Marche and Apryll at what tyme we sawe them doe it, neuerthelesse they tolde vs that they fished at all tymes, for that vsually they doe feede on fische, wherfoze it behoueth them to make theyr prouision continually. When we had passed *Fuquien*, wee went into *Quicin* styre, where the fine claye vessell is made, as I sayde befoze: and we came to a citie, the one syde whereof is bulle bypon the foote of a hyl, wherby passeth a ryuer nauigable: there we tooke Boate, and went by water towarde the sea: on ech syde of the ryuer we found many cities, townes, and villages, where in we sawe great stoze of marchandysse, but specially of fine clay: there byd wee lande by the way to buye victualles and other necessaries. Goyng downe this ryuer Southwarde, we were glad that

The Speech of
Fuquien styre.

Libr. The Decales.
Mancroft Library.

that we thre we neare vnto a warmer countrey, from whence wee had been farre distant: this countrey we passed through in eyght dayes, for our iourney laye downe the streame. Before that I doe say any thyng of that shyre we came into, I will fyrst speake of the great citie of *Quicin*, wherein alwayes remaineth a *Tutan*, that is a gouernour, as you haue seene, though some *Tutans* doe gouerne two or thre shyres.

That *Tutan* that was condemned for our cause, of whom I spake before, was bozne in this countrey, but he gouerned *Foquien* shyre: nothing it auayled him to bee so great an officer. This countrey is so great, that in many places where we went, there had ben as yet no talke of his death, although he were executed a whole yeere before. At the citie *Quancbe* whyther we came, the riuer was so great that it seemed a sea, though it were so litle where we tooke water, that we needed smal boates. One day about .ix. of þe clocke, beginning to row neare the walles with the streame, we came at noone to a brydge made of many barges, ouerlinked all togeather with two mighty cheyns. There stayed we vntill it was late, but we saw not one go either by theron or downe, except two *Louteas* þe about the going downe of þe sun, came & set them downe there, the one in one side, the other in the other side. Than was the brydge opened in many places, & barges both great & smal to the number of .600. began to passe: those that went by the streame, at one place, such as came downe, at an other. Whā al had thus hot the brydge, than was it shut by againe. We heare say that euery day they take this order in all principall places of merchandysse, for payng of þe custome vnto the king, specially for salt, wherof the greatest reuenews are made that the king hath in this countrey. The passages of the brydge where it is opened, bee so neare the shore, that nothing can passe without touching the same. To stay the barges at their pleasure, that they go no farther forwarde, are vsed certayne pyon instrumentes. The brydge consisteth of .112. barges, there stayed we vntyll the euening that they were opened, lochely oppressed by the multitude of people that came to see vs, so many in number, that we were enforced to goe asyde from the banke vntyll such tyme as the brydge was opened: howbeit we were neuerthelessse thronged about wth many boates full of people. And though in other citie and places where we went,

Alis Cenchi.

The knyges
reuenues.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

went, the people came so importunate vpon vs, that it was needfull to withdraw our selues: yet were we heere much more molested for the number of people, and this bridge, the principal way out of the citie vnto an other place so well inhabited, that were it walled about, it myght bee compared to the citie. When we had shot the bridge, we kept along the citie vntill that it was nyght, then met we with an other ryuer that ioyned with this, we rowed by that by the walles vntill we came to an other bridge gallantly made of barges, but lesser a great deale than that other bridge ouer the greater streame: heere stayed we that nyght, and other two dayes with more quiet, being out of the ptease of the people. These riuers do meet without at one corner point of the citie. In either of them were so many barges great and small, that we all thought them at the least to be aboue three thousande: the greater number therof was in the lesser ryuer, where we were. Amongst the rest here lay certayne greater vessels, called in their language *Parai*, that serue for the *Tutan*. When he taketh his voyage by other ryuers that ioyne with this, towards *Pachin*, where the king maketh his abode. For, as many tymes I haue erst sayd, all this country is full of riuers. Desirous to see those *Parai* we got into some of them, where we found some chambers set forth with gilded beds very richly, other furnished with tables and seats, & all other thinges so neate and in perfection, that it was wonderfull.

Quiacim shyre, as farre as I can perceiue, lyeth vpon the south. On that syde we kept at our first entry therein, traueyling not far from the high mountaynes we saw there. A king what people dwelleth beyond those mountaynes, it was told me that they be theues, & men of a strange language. And bycause that vnto sundry places neare this riuer, & mountaynes do approach, whence the people issuing downe do many tymes great harme, this order is taken at the entry into *Quiacim* shyre. To guard this riuer when continually go to & fro *Parai* great & small fraught with salt, & powdered with pepper, and other necessaries for that countrey: they do lay in diuers places certain *Parai*, & great barges armed, wherein watch & ward is kept day & night in both sides of the riuer, for the safete of the passage, & securitie of suche *Parai* as doe remaine there, though the traueyers neuer go but many in company. In euery rode therby at the least there is, in some two hundred men, as the passage requyret.

This

Lden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

This garde is kept vsually vntill you come to the cite *Ombis*, where continually the *Tusan* of this kyng, and eke of *Canton*, maketh his abode. From that cite vnto *Paris*, there be alwayes armed one hundred and fiftie *Paris*, to accompany o- ther vesselles fraught with marchandyse, and all this at the kyng his charges. This seemed vnto me one of the strangest thinges I vpd see in this countrey.

When we laye at *Fuquien*, we vpd see certayne *Doozes*, who knewe so litle of theyr secte, that they could say nothyng els but that *Dachomet* was a *Dooze*, my father was a *Dooze*, and I am a *Dooze*, with some ocher wordes of theyr *Alcozane*, where- withall, in abstinence from swynnes fleshe, they lyue vntill the deuyll take them all. This when I sawe, & beyng sure that in many *Chinis* cities the reliques of *Dachomet* are kept, as soone as we came to the cite where these felowes be, I enforced my selfe of them, and learned the truch.

These *Doozes*, as they tolde me, in tymes past came in great shippes fraught with marchandise from *Pachin* ward, to a *Porte* graunted vnto them by the kyng, as hee is wont to all them that traffike into this countrey, where they beyng arriued at a litle towne standyng in the hauens mouth, in tyme conuerted vnto their secte the greatest *Loutea* there. When that *Loutea* with all his family was become *Doozish*, the rest began lykewyse to doe the same. In this part of *China* the people be at libertie, euery one to worshipp and solow what him lyketh best. Wherefore no body tooke heede thereto, vntill such tyme as the *Doozes* perceyving that many solowed them in superstition, and that the *Loutea* fa- uoured them, they began to forbyd wholy the eatyng of swines flesh. But all this countrymen and women, chosing rather to for- sake father and mocher, than to leaue of eatyng of poake, by no meanes would yelde to that proclamation. For besides the great desyre they all haue to eat that kynde of meate, many of them doe lyue thereby: and therefore the people complayned vnto the *Magistrates*, accusing the *Doozes* of a conspiracy pretended be- twixt them and the *Loutea* agaynst theyr kyng. In this countrey, as no suspicion, no not one trapectous word is long borne with- all: so was the kyng speedily aduertised therof, who gaue com-
mande

commandement out of hande that the aforesayde *Louts* should be put to death, and with hym the *Woozes* of most importancer the other to be layde fyrst in pylson, and afterwarde to be sent abrode into certayne cities, where they remayned perpetuall slaues vnto the kyng. To this cite came by happe men and women threescore and odder, who at this day are brought to fure men and foure women, for it is nowe twentie yeres agoe this happened. They offsprynge passeth the number of 200. and they in this cite, as the rest in other cities, whyther they were sent, haue they *Moscheas*, wherunto they al resorte every fryday to kepe they holypdaye. But, as I thynke, that wyl no longer endure, then whyles they do lyue, that came from thence, for they posteritie is so confused, that they haue nothing of a *Wooze* in them but abstinence from swynes fleshe, and yet many of them do eate thereof pmiulle. They tell me that they natiue countrey hath name *Camarian*, a fyne lande, whereln be many kynges, and the Indishe countrey well knowen vnto them. It may so be: for as sone as they dyd see our seruauntes (our seruauntes were *Preuzarettes*) they iudged them to be *Indians*: many of they woordes sounded vppon the *Perslike* tongue, but none of vs coude vnderstand them. I asked them whether they conuerted any of the *Chinische* nation vnto they secte: they answered me, that with much a do they comirred the women with whom they do marry, yeldyng me no other cause thereof, but the difficultie they find in them to be brought from eating swines fleshe and dnyking of wine. I am perswaded therfore, that if this countrey were in league with vs, forbydnyng them nyether of both, it would be an easy matter to draw them to our religion, from they superstition, wher at they them selues do laugh when they do they *Idolatrie*. I haue learned mozeouer that the sea wherby these *Woozes* that came to *China*, were woont to traualle, is a very great gulfe, that falleth into this countrey out from *Tartaria* and *Persia*, leuynge on the other syde all the countrey of *China*, and lande of the *Mogowites*, dnydnyng alwayes towarde the south: and of all lykelyhood it is euen so, because that these *Woozes*, the whiche we haue seene, be rather browne then white, wherby they shewe them selues to come from some warmer countrey then *China* is, neere to *Pasbin*, where the

That is they temples.

It should seme by they voyage to be *Candadan* in *Ortelius*.

It seemeth they came by the river from the *Caspian* sea.

At cacan.

Ek. i.

ryuers

Lden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

ryuers are frozen in the wynter for colde, and many of them so vehemently, that cartes may passe ouer them.

Mi. Nuding
Tartares.

We dyd see in this citie many *Tartares*, *Mogorites*, *Bremes*, and *Laoynes*, both men & women. The *Tartares* are men very white, good horsemen and archers, confynng with *China* on that side where *Pachin* standeth, separated from thence by great mountaynes that are betwixt these kingdomes. Ouer them be certayne wayes to passe, and for both sydes, Castelles continually kepte with souldiers: in tyme past the *Tartares* were woont alwayes to haue warrs with the *Chineans*, but these fourescore yeeres past they were quiete, vntyll the seconde yeere of our imprysonment. The *Mogorites* be in lyke maner whyte, and heathen, we are aduertised that of one syde they border vppon these *Tartares*, and confine with the *Persike Tartares* on the other syde, whereof we sawe in them some tokens, as theyr maner of clothes, and that kynde of hat the *Saracenes* do weare. The *Doozes* affirmed, that where the kyng lyeth, there be many *Tartares* and *Mogorites*, that brought into *China* certayne blewes of great valewe: al we thought it to be *Vanil* of *Cambaia* woont to be sold at *Ormus*. So that this is the true situation of that countrey, not in the Northpartes, as many tymes I haue harde saye, confynng with *Germanie*.

Mounts
ofont.

Mogorites.

Bremes.

As for the *Bremes* we haue seene in this citie *Chenchi* certayne men & women, amongst whom there was one that came not long since, haupng as yet her heare tyed by after the *Pegues* fashions: this woman, and other moe with whom a blacke *Dooze* damsell in our companie had conference, and dyd vnderstande them well ynough, had dwelt in *Pegbu*. This newe come woman, imaginynng that we ment to make our abode in that citie, byd vs to be of good comforte, for that her countrey was not distant from thence aboute fise dayes iourney, and that out of her countrey there laye a hygh way for vs home into our owne. Beyng asked the way, she answered that the fyrst thre dayes the way lyeth ouer certayne great mountaynes and wylder nesse, afterwarde people to be mette withall agayne. Thence two
dayes

dayes sozney more to the Breames countrey. Wherefore I doo conclude, that *Chenchi* is one of the confynes of this kyngdome, seperated by certayne huge mountaynes, as it hath been already sayd, that lye out towardes the South. In the residue of these mountaynes standeth the prouince *Sian*, the *Laoyns* countrey, *Cambaia*, *Chinapa*, and *Cochinchina*. Southwards
from *Chenchi*
to the sea.

This citie, cheefe of other syxteene, is situated in a pleasaunt playne, aboundyng in thynges necessarie, sea fysh only excepted, for it standeth farre from the sea: of freshe fysh so muche store, that the market places are neuer emptye. The walles of this citie are very strong and hygh: one day dyd I see the *Louteas* thereof go vpon the walles, to take the viewe thereof, bozne in theyr seates I spake of before, accompanied with a troupe of hoysmen, that went two and two: It was tolde me they myght haue gone thye and thye. We haue seene mozeouer, that with in this aforesayde citie the kyng hath moe than a thousand of his kynne lodged in great pallaces, in diuers partes of the citie: theyr gates be redde, and the entyre into theyr houses, that they may be knowen, for that is the kyng his colour. These gentlemen, accorbyng to theyr nearenesse in blood vnto the kyng, as soone as they be married, receiue theyr place in honour: this place neither encreaseth nor diminissheth in any respect, as long as the kyng lyueth, the kyng appoynteth them theyr wyues and familie, allowyng them by the Doneth al thynges necessarie abundantly, as he doth to his gouernours of shyes and cities, howbeit, not one of these hath as long as he lyueth, any charge or gouernment at al. They geue them selues to eatyng and drynkyng, and be for the most part burly men of bodie, inlomuche that espyng any one of them, whom we had not seene before, we myghte knowe hym to be the kyng his cosyn. They be neuerthelesse very pleasaunt, courteous, and sayre conditioned: ne dyd we finde, at the time we were in that citie, so much honour and good entertaynement any where, as at theyr handes. They byd vs to theyr houses, to eate and drynke, and when they founde vs not, or were not wylling to go with them, they byd our seruantes, & slaues, causing them to lye down with the first. Notwithstanding the good lodgyng these gentlemen haue so commobious that they want:

kk. ii.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

want nothing, yet are they in this bondage, that during life they neuer goe abroad. The cause, as I vnderstand, wherefore the kyng so bleth his cosynes, is that none of them at anye tyme may rebell agaynst hym: and thus he shutteth them vp in thre or foure other cities. None of them can play on the Lute: and to make that kynde of pastyme peculiar vnto them only, all other in the cities where they do lyue be forbydden that instrument, the Curtisians and bynde folke only excepted, who be musicians, and can play.

This king furthermore for the greater securitie of his realme, and the auoyding of tumultes, letteth not one in all his countrey to be called Lord, except he be of his blood. Many great estates and gouernours there be, that during theyr office are lodged Lordlyke, and do beare the port of myghtie Princes: but they be so many tymes displaced, and other placed a newe, that they haue not the whyle to become corrupt. True it is that during theyr office they be well provided for, as afterwarde also lodged at the kynges charges, and in pension as long as they liue, payde them Monthly in the cities where they dwell, by certaine officers appoynted for that purpose. The kyng then is a Lorde only, not one besides hym as you haue scene, except it be suche as be of his blood. A Nephewe of the kyng, the kyng his sisters sonne, lyeth continually within the walles of the cite, in a strong pallas built Castellike, euen as his other cousins do, remainyng alwayes within doores, serued by Eunuches, neuer dealing with any matters. Their festiuall dayes, newe Moones, and full Moones the magistrates make great bankets, & so do such as be of the king his blood. The king his Nephewe hath name *Vanfali*, his pallas is walled about, the wall is not high, but foure square, and in circuit nothing inferiour to the walles of Goa, the outside is painted red, in euery square a gate, & ouer each gate a tower, made of timber excellently well wrought: before the principall gate of the foure, that openeth into the high Street, no Louer, be he neuer so great, may passe on horsebacke, or carried in his seat. Amynge this quadrangle standeth the pallas where that gentleman lieth, doubtlesse worth the sight, although we came not in to see it. By report the roofes of the towers and house, are glased greene, the greater part of the quadrangle

Goa is a cite
of the Portu-
gales in East
Indie.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Quadrangle set with sauage trees, as Okes, Chestnuttes, Cypres, Pineapples, Cedars, and other suche lyke that we do wante, after the maner of a wood, wherin are heapt Stagges, Oxen, and other beastes, for that Lorde his recreation neuer goyng abrode, as I haue sayde. One prebeminence this citie hath aboute the reste where we haue been, and it of ryght as we do thynke, that besydes the multitude of market places, wherin all thynges are to be solde, through euery streete continually are cryed all thynges necessarie, as fleshe of all sortes, freshe-fyshe, hearbes, oyle, vineger, meale, rise, in summa, al thinges so plentifully, that many houles neede no seruantes, euery thing beyng brought to theyr doores. Most part of the merchantes remaine in the suburbes, for that y cities are shut by euery night as I haue sayde. The merchantes therefore the better to attende theyr businesse, do chuse rather to make theyr abode without in the suburbes, then within the citie. I haue seene in this ryuer a pretie kynde of fshyng, not to be omitted in my opinton, and therefore wyll I set it downe. The kyng hath in many ryuers good stowe of barges full of sea crowes, that breede, are fedde, and do dye therein, in certayne cages, allowed monethly a certayne prouision of ryse. These barges the kyng bestoweth vpon his greatestt magistrates, geuyng to some two, to some thre of them, as he thynketh good, to fyshe therewithall after this maner. At the houre appoynted to fyshe, all the barges are brought togeather in a circle, where the ryuer is shalowe, and the crowes, tyed togeather vnder the wynges, are let leape downe into the water, some vnder, some aboue, woth the lookyng vpon: eche one as he hath filled his bagge, goeth to his owne barge and emptieth it, whiche done, he retourneth to fyshe agayne. Thus hauyng taken good stowe offyshe, they set the crowes at libertie, and do suffer them to fyshe for theyr owne pleasure. There were in that citie, where I was, twentie barges at the least of these aforesayde crowes. I wente almost every day to see them, yet coulde I neuer be thoughtly satisfied to see so strange a kynde offshyng.

Rk. iii.

Of

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

¶ Of the Ilande Giapan, and

other litle Isles in the East Ocean.

By R. Wylles.



The extreme part of the knowen worlde by to vs, is the noble Ilande *Giapan*, witten othertwyle *Iapon* and *Iapan*. This Iland standeth in the East Ocean, beyonde all *Asie*, betwixte *Cathayo* & the *West Indies* 36. degrees Northwarde from the equinoctial line, in the same clime with the South part of *Spayne* and *Portugall*, distant from thence by sea . 6000. leagues: the trauipe thither, both for ciuile discord, great piracie, and often shipwackes, very daungerous. This countrey is hylly, and pestred with snowe, wherefore it is neither so warme as *Portugall*, & yet very poore, as farre as we can learne, wantyng oyle, butter, cheese, mylke, egges, suger, honny, by neger, saffarne, cynamome, and pepper. Barly byanne the Ilanders do vse in steede of salte: medicinable thinges hoisome for the body haue they none at al. Neuerthelesse in that Iland sundry frutes do grow, not much vnlike the frutes of *Spayne*: a great store of *Syluer* mynes are therein to be seene. The people tractable, ciuile, wyttpe, courteous, without decepte, in vertue and honest conuersation exceeding all other nations lately discovered, but so muche standyng vpon theyr reputation, that theyr chiefe *Idole* may be thought honour. The contempte therof caueth among them much discord and debate, manslaughter and murder: euen for theyr reputation they do honour theyr parentes, keepe theyr promyses, absteyne from adultery and robberyes, punysshing by death the least robbery done, holdyng for a pynnciple, that whosoener stealeth a crylle, wyll if he see occasion steale a greater thing. It may be theise is so seuerely punished of them, for that the nation is oppressed with scarcitie of al thynges necessarye, and so poore, that euen for miserie they strangle theyr owne chyldren, preferring death before want. These fristes do nether eate nor kyll any foule. They lyue chiefly by fysh, hearbes, and frutes, so healthfully, that they dye very olde. Of *Ryce* and *Wheat* there is no great store.

¶

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

No man is ashamed there of his pueritie, ne be they? gentlemen therfore lesse honored of the meauer people, ne wyl the poorest gentleman there. matche his chyld with the baser sort for any gayne, so muche they do make moze account of gentry then of wealth. The greatest dellyght they haue, is in armorie, eache boy at fourteene peeres of age, be he bozne gentle or other wyse, hath his sward and dagger: very good archers they be, contempnyng all other nations in comparison of they? manhood and prowesse, puttyng not by one iniurie, be it neuer so small in woorde or deebe, among them selues. They seeve moderately, but they dlynke largely. The vse of vines they knowe not, they? dlynke they make of Ryce, vterly they do abboze vyle, and all games, accomptyng nothyng moze vyle in a man, then to geue hym selfe vnto those chynges, that make vs greedie and desirous to get other mens goodes. If at any time they do sweare, for that seldome they are wont to do, they sweare by the Sunne: many of them are taught good letters. wherfore they may so much the sooner be brought vnto Christianitie. Eche one is contented with one wyse: they be all desirous to learne, and naturally enclined vnto honestie and curtesie: godly talke they lysten vnto wplynglye, especially when they vnderstand it througthlye. They? gouernment consisteth of thre estates. The first place is due vnto the hygh priest, by whose lawes and decrees, al publique and priuate matters, apparteptyng vnto religion, are decided. The lectes of they? cleargie men, whom they do call *Bonzi*, be of no estimation or auctoritie, except the hygh priest by letters patent do confirme the same: he confirmeth and alloweth of they? *Tundi*, who be as it were Bishops, although in many places they are nominated by sundrye Princes. These *Tundi*, are greatly honoured of all sortes: they do geue benefices vnto inferiour ministers, and doo graunt licences for many chynges, as to eate fleshe vppon those daies they go in Pilgrimage to they? Idoles, with suche lyke priuileges. Finallye, this hygh priest, wont to be chosen in *China*, for his wisdom and learnyng: made in *Giapan*, for his gentry and byth: hath so large a Dominion, and reuenues so great, that thsones he beareth the petty Kinges, and Princes there.

They? gouernment.

Tundi.

Rk. liii.

They?

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Theyr seconde principall Magistrate, in theyr language *Vo*, is the cheefe *Herehaught*, made by succession and byrth, honored as a God. This gentleman neuer toucheth the grounde with his foote without forsaityng of his office, he neuer goeth abrode out of his house, nor is at all tymes to be seene. At home he is epyther carried about in a lytter, or els he goeth in wooden *Choppines* a foote hygh from the grounde: commonly he sitteth in his *Chayre* with a sword in one syde, and a bowe and arrowes in the other, next his body he weareth blacke, his outward garment is redde, all shadowed ouer with *Cypesse*, at his cap hang certayne *Lambeare* much lyke vnto a *Bishops Wyper*, his forehead is paynted whyte and red, he eateth his meate in earthen *Dishes*. This *Herehaught* determineth in all *Giapan* the diuers cycles of honour, whereof in that Iland is great plentie, eache one perticularly knowen by his badge, commonly seene in scalyng by theyr letters, and dayly altered accordyng to theyr degrees. About this *Vo* every noble man hath his *Soliciter*, for the nation is so desirous of pryse and honour, that they stryue among them selues who may byrth hym best. By these meanes the *Herehaught* groweth so ryche, that although he haue neyther lande nor any reuenewes otherwysse, yet may he be accompted the wealthiest man in al *Giapan*. For thre causes this great Magistrate may loose his office: first, if he touch the ground with his foote, as it hath been already sayd: next, if he kyl anye body: thyrde, yf he be founde an euemie vnto peace and quietnesse, howbeit neyther of these aforesayde causes is sufficient to put hym to death.

Theyr thyrde cheefe officer is a *Judge*, his office is to take by & to end matters in controuersie, to determine of warrres & peace, that which he thynketh ryght, to punyssh rebelles, wherein he may commaunde the noble men to assist hym upon paine of forsaityng theyr goodes: neuerthelesse at all tymes he is not obeyed, for that many matters are ended rather by might and armes, than determined by law. Other controuersies are decided either in the *Tempozal Court*, as it seemeth good vnto the *Princes*, or in the *Spiritual consistoite* before the *Tundi*.

Rebelles are executed in this maner, especially yf they be noble men, or officers. The kyng, looke what daye he geueth sentence

P. 231.

sentence agaynst any one, the same day the partie wherfor he be is aduertised thereof, and the day to be him of his execution. The condemned person at keth of the messenger whers that it may be lawfull for him to kyll him selfe: the which thing when the kyng doeth graunt, the partie takyng it for an honour, putteth on his best apparell, and launcyng his body a crosse from the brest downe all the belly, murthereth him selfe. This kynde of death they take to be without infamy, ne doe their chyldren, for they fathers crime so punished, lose they goods. But if the king reserue them to be executed by the Hangman, than flocketh hee together his chyldren, his seruantes, and friends home to his house, to preserue his lyfe by force. The kyng committeth the setting of him out vnto his chiefe Judge, who setteth vpon him with bow and arrowes, & after ward with pykes & swordes, untill the rebell and all his family be slayne, to theyr perpetuall ignominie and shame.

The Indyche wyters make mention of sundry great cities in this Island, as *Cangoxina* a *Hancu* towne in the South parte thereof, and *Meaco* distant from thence 300 leagues northward, the royall seat of the kyng, and most wealthy of all other townes in that Islande. The people thereabout is very noble, and theyr language the best *Iaponishe*. In *Meaco* are sayde to be niene thousande houses inhabited and bywarde, a famous *Uniuersitie*, and in it fyue principall Colledges, besydes colles and cloysters of *Bonzi*, *Leguixil*, and *Hamacata*, that is, *Priestes*, *Monkes*, and *Runnes*. Other fyue notable *Uniuersities* there be in *Giapan*, namely, *Coia*, *Negrn*, *Homi*, *Frenof*, and *Bandu*. The fyft soure haue in them at the least 3500 schollers: in the fyft are many moe. For *Bandu* prouince is very great, and possessed by fyve princes, fyue whereof are ballalles vnto the sixt, yet he him selfe subiecte vnto the *Iaponish* kyng, usually called the great king of *Meaco*: lesser scholes there be many in diuers places of this Islande. And thus muche specially concerning this glorious Islande, among so many barbarous nations and rude regions, haue I gathered together in one summe, out of sundry letters wytten from thence into *Europe*, by no lesse faithfull reporters thā famous traueylers. For confirmation wherof, as also for the knowledg of other thinges not conteyned in the premises, the curious rea-

DCC3

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Ilande

bers may peruse these four volumes of *Indische matters* written long agoe in Italian, and of late compendiously made latin, by *Petrus Maffei* my olde acquainted friend, entitling the same, *De rebus Japonicis*. One whole letter out of the fyft booke thereof, specially entreatyng of that countrey, haue I done into Englyshe word for word, in suche wyse as foloweth.

Aloisius Froes, to his companyons in Iesus Christ,
that remayne in China and Indie.

THe last yere, deare brethren, I wrote unto you from *Firando*, howe *Cosmus Turrianus* had appoynted me to traueyle to *Meaco*, to help *Gaspar Pilela*, for that there the hartest was great, the labourers fewe, and that I should haue for my companon in that iourney *Aloisius Almeida*. It seemeth now my parte, hauing by the helpe of God ended so long a voyage, to signifie unto you by letter suche thinges specially as I myght thinke you woulde most delyght to knowe. And because at the beggynnyng *Almeida* and I so parted the whole labour of wytyng letters betwixt vs, that he should speake of our voyage, and suche thinges as happened therein, I should make relation of the *Meachians* estate, and wyte what I could well learne of the *Giapans* maners and conditions: setting asyde all discourtes of our voyage, that whiche standeth me vppon I wil discharge in this Epistle, that you considering howe artificially, how cunningly, vnder the pretexte of religion that craftie aduersary of mankynde, leadeth and draweth vnto perdition the *Giaponish* myndes, blynded with many superstitions and ceremonies, may the more pittie this nation.

The inhabitants of *Giapan*, as men that neuer had greatly to doe with other nations, in their Geography diuided the whole world into three partes, *Giapan*, *Sian*, and *China*. And albeit the *Giapans* receyued out of *Sian*, and *China*, their superstitions and ceremonies, yet doe they neuerthelesse contemne all other nations in comparison of them selues, & standyng in their owne conceite doe far preferre them selues before all other sortes of people in wisdom and policie.

Touчыng the situation of the countrey, & nature of the soyle, vnto the thinges escaped erst written, this one thing wil I adde: In these Ilandes the sommer to be most hot, the winter extreme colde. In the kyngdome of *Canga*, as we call it, falleth so muche snow,

427
 other many tymes, to herein they vse great diligence, especially in
 drinckng one to an other, in somuch that the better sorte, least they
 myght rudely commit some fault therein, doe vse to reade certayne
 bookes wyrtten of dueties and ceremonies apperteynyng vnto
 bankettes. To be delicate and fine, they put theyr meat into theyr
 mouthes with litle forks, accompting it great rudenes to touch
 it with theyr fingers: wynter and sommer they drynke water as
 hot as they may possible abyde it. Theyr houses are in daunger
 of fyre, but finely made, and cleane, layde all ouer with straw pal-
 lettes, wherevpon they doe both sit in steede of stooles, and lye
 in theyr clothes, with billets vnder theyr heades. For feare of de-
 sityng these pallettes, they goe epyther barefoote within doores, or
 weare strawe pantofles on theyr busshymes when they come a-
 broade, the which they laye asyde at theyr returre home agayne.
 Gentlemen for the most parte doe passe the nyght in banketting,
 musike, and bayne discourses, they sleepe the day tyme. In *Mea-
 co* and *Saciao* there is good store of beewes, but they be very litle,
 and may be compared vnto our bees.

In bynyngng vpon theyr children they vse wordes onely to re-
 buke them, admonishyng as diligently and aduisedly boyes of six
 or seuen yeeres age, as though they were olde men. They are gi-
 uen very much to entertayne strangers, of whom most curiously
 they loue to aske euen in trifles what foreyne nations doe, and
 theyr fashions. Suche argumentes and reasons as be manifest,
 and are made playne with examples, doe greatly persuade them.
 They detest all kynde of theft, whosoever is taken in that faulte
 may be slayne freely of any body. No publike yllions, no com-
 mon gables, no ordinary Iusticers: pryvately eche householder
 hath the hearyng of matters at home in his owne house, and the
 punishyng of greater crimes that deserue death without delaye.
 Thus vsually the people is kept in awe and feare.

About foure hundred yeeres agoe (as in theyr olde recordez
 we fynde) all *Giapan* was subiecte vnto one *Emperor*, whose royall
 seate was *Meaco*, in the *Giaponishe* language called *Cubucana*.
 But the nobilitie rebellyng agaynst him, by litle and litle haue
 taken away the greatest parte of his dominion, howbeit his title
 continnally remaineth, and the residue in some respect doe make
 great accompt of him stil, acknowledgyng him for theyr superior.
 Thus

Thus the Empire of *Giapan*, is tynged past but one about, is now divided into little like kingdoms, the which cause of chaffe warres continually in that place, so no small hindrance of the Gospell, whilst the kynges that dwell neare together inuade one an other, eche one countynge to make his kyngdome greater. Furthermoze in the cite *Adacco* is the palace of the high priest, whom that nation honoureth as a God, he dwelt in his house 366. Yeeres, one whereof by course is eury night set by his syde for a watcheman. He is thought of the common people to be holy, that it may not be lawfull for him to goe vpon the earth: if happily he doe see one foote to the ground, he loseth his office. He is respected very sumptuously, he is mapnteyned by almes. The heards and beards of his ministers are shaven, they haue names *Canyas*, and theyr auctoritie is great throughout all *Giapan*. The *Cabucans* bleth them for Embassabours to vnder controuerxies betwixte princes, and to ende theyr warres, whereof they are wont to make very great gayne. It is now two yeeres since, as there is about, that one of them came to *Bungo*, to entreat of peace betwixt the kyng thereof, and the kyng of *Amanguzzo*. This *Agens* favouring the kyng of *Bungo* his cause more than the other, thought to passe that the foyle sayde kyng of *Bungo* should keepe two kyngdomes, the which he had taken in warres from the kyng of *Amanguzzo*. Wherefore he had for his rewarde of the kyng of *Bungo* above thirtie thousande Ducates. And thus saith heereof.

But his almes
are very good.

I come now to other superstitions and ceremonies, that you may see, deare brethren, that whiche I sayde in the beginning, howe suche the deuyll hath deceyued the *Giapanishe* nation, and howe diligent and ready they be to obey and worship him. Now first, all remembrance and knowledg not onely of Christ our redeemer, but also of that one God the maker of all thinges, is cleane extinguisht, & utterly abolished out of the *Giapanishe* hartes. Howeouer theyr superstitious sectes are many, whereas it is lawfull for eche one to folow that which lyeth him best: but the principall sectes are two, namely the *Amidans* and *Xacians*. Wherefore in this countrey shall you see many thunders, not onely of *Bonzii* men, but also of *Bonzie* women diuersly attyred, for some doe weare whyte vnder, and blacke upper garments, other goe apparelled in ashe colour, & theyr *Idole* hath name *Demichis* from

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

from these the *Amidans* differ very muche. Agayne the men *Bonzii* for the most parte dwell in sumptuous houses, and haue great reuenues. These felowes are chaste by commaundement, marry they may not vnder payne of death. In the mydd of theyr Temple is erected an Altar, whereon standeth a wooden Idole of *Amida*, naked from the gyble vpwarde, with holes in his eares, after the maner of Italian Gentlewomen, sitting on a wooden rose, goodly to beholde. They haue great libraries, and halles for them all to dyne and suppe togeather, and belles wherewith they are certayne houres called to prayers. In the euenyng the Superintendent gyueth eche one a theame for meditation. After mydnyght before the Altar in theyr Temple they doe say Mattens as it were out of *Xaca* his last booke, one quier one verse, the other quier an other. Early in the mornyng eche one gyueth him selfe to meditation one houre: they haue theyr heaues and beaues. Theyr Cloysters be very large, and within the pprecincte thereof, Chappelles of the *Fotoquins*, for by that name some of the *Giapanish* Sainctes are called: theyr holydayes yeerely be very many. Most of these *Bonzii* be Gentlemen, for that the *Giaponish* nobilitie, charged with many chyldren, vse to make most of them *Bonzii*, not being able to leaue for eche one a patrymony good ynough. The *Bonzii* most couetously bent, know all the wayes howe to come by money. They sell vnto the people many scoles of paper, by the helpe whereof the common people thinketh it selfe warranted from all powde of the deuylles. They borowe lykewyse money to bee repayde with great vsury in an other world, grynng by Obligation vnto the lender an assurance thereof, the whiche departyng out of this lyfe hee may carry with him to hell.

Inamburn.

There is an other great company of suche as are called *Inamburn*, with curbe and starvng heare. They make profession to fynde out agayne thinges either lost or stolen, after this sorte. They set before them a chyld, whom the deuyl inuadeth, called by eithur by charmes: of that chyld than doe they aske that which they are desirous to knowe.

These mens prayers both good and bad are thought greatly to preuaile, insomuch that both their blessinges and theyr curses they

they sell vnto the people . The Moulces of this order, before they be admitted, goe together two or three thousande in a company, by a certayne high mountayne to do penance there, threescore dayes voluntarily punishyng them selues . In this tyme the deuyl sheweth him selfe vnto them in sundry shapcs: and they, like young graduates, admitted as it were felowes into some certayne company, are set forth with whyte casselles hanging about theyr neckes, and blacke Bonettes that scarcely couer any moze than the crowne of theyr heades . Thus attyed they range abrode in all *Giapan*, to set out them selues and their cunning to sale, eche one beatyng his basen bee carryeth alwayes about with him, to gyue notice of theyr comyng in all towncs where they passe.

There is also another sorte called *Genguis*, that make profession to shewe by southsaying where stolen thinges are, and who were the theeves. These dwel in the toppe of an high mountayne, blacke in face for the continuall heate of the sunne, for the colde, wyndes, and rapnes they doe continually endure . They marry but in theyr owne tribe and lyne: the reporte goeth that they bee hoyned beastes . They clyme by most hygh rocks and hylles, and goe ouer very great ryuers by the onely arte of the deuyl, who to hyng those wretches the moze into error, byddeth them to goe vp a certayne hygh mountayne, where they stande miserably gazing and earnestly lookyng for him as long as the deuyl appoynteth them . At the lynch at noone tyme, or in the euenyng, cometh that deuyl, whom they call *Amida*, among them to shewe him selfe vnto them: this shew breedeth in the hynnes and hartes of men suche a kynde of superstition, that it can by no meanes be rooted out of them afterwarde.

The deuyl was wont also in an other mountaine to shewe him selfe vnto the *Giaponish* nation. Who so was moze desirous than other, to go to heauen and to enioy Paradyse, thither went he to see that syght, and hauyng seene the deuyl, followed hym, so by the deuyl persuaded, into a denne wayll hee came to a deepe pytte . Into this pytte the deuyl was wont to leape, & to take with him his worshypper whom he there murdered. This deceit was thus perceyued . An olde man bynded with this superstition, was by his soune dissuaded from thence, but all in vayne.

Wherfore

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Therefore his sonne folowed him privately into that denne which
 his house and crotoes, where the deuyll gallantly appeared un-
 to him in the shape of a man. Whilst the olde man falleth downe
 to worship the deuyll, his sonne speedily shooting an arrow at
 the spirite so appearing, stroke a force in steede of a man, so
 deuyll was that shape altered. This old man his sonne tracking
 the force so rumpng away, came to that pit wherof I spake, and
 in the bottome thereof he founde many bones of dead men, decey-
 ned by the deuyll after that sorte in tyme past. Thus deliuered hee
 his father from present death, and all other from so pestilent an
 opinion.

There is furthermore a place bearyng name *Coia*, very famous
 for the multitude of Abbeyes the *Bonzys* haue therein. The begin-
 ner and founder wherof is thought to be one *Combendaxis* a sut-
 tle craftie felowe, that gotte the name of holynesse by cunningg
 speache, although the lawes and ordynances he made were alto-
 greather deuillithe: he is sayde to haue founde out the *Giapanishe*
 letters used at this day. In his later yeeres this slym suttie bury-
 ed him selfe in a fouresquare graue, foure cubites deepe, seuerely
 forbydyng it to be opened, for that than he dyed not, but rested
 his body, wearyed with continuall busynesse, vntyll many thou-
 sande thousandes of yeeres were passed, after the whiche tyme a
 great learned man named *Miroz* should come into *Giapan*, and
 than would he ryle by out of his graue agayne. About his tombe
 many lampes are lyghted, sent thither out of vnyuersal prouinces,
 for that the people is perswaded, that whosoener is liberall and
 beneficiall towardes the beautifying of that monument, shall not
 onely encrease in wealth in this worlde, but in the lyfe to come be
 safe through *Combendaxis* helpe. Suche as gyue them selues to
 worship him, liue in those *Monasteries* or *Abbeyes*, with shauen
 heads, as though they had forsaken all secular matters, wheras in
 dedde they wallow in all sortes of wickednesse and lust. In these
 houses, the which are many (as I sayde) in number, doe remaine
 6000. *Bonzys* or thereabout, besydes the multitude of laye men:
 women be restrayned from thence vpon payne of death. An
 other company of *Bonzys* dwelleth at *Fatowobaiti*. They teache
 a great multitude of chyldren all trickes and sleights of gyule
 and thieft: whom they doe fynde to be of great cowardnesse, those
 doe

doe they instruct in all the pettigrues of princes, and fashions of the nobilitie, in chivalry, & eloquence, and so send them abroad into other prouinces, attyred lyke yong princes, to this ende, that saynyng them selues to be nobly borne, they may with great summes of money, borrowed under the colour and pretence of nobilitie, returne agayne. Wherefore this place is so infamous in all *Giapan*, that if any schollar of that order bee happily taken abroad, hee incontynently dyeth for it. Neuerthelesse these counterfeiters leaue not dayly to vse theyr wonted wickednesse and knauery.

North from *Giapan*, three hundred leagues out of *Meaco*, lyeth a great country of sauage men, clothed in beastes skynnes, rough bodied, with huge beardes, and monstrous muchaches, the which they hold by with litle forks as they dlynke. These people are great drinkers of wyne, fierce in warres, and much feared of the *Giapans*: beyng hurte in fight, they walbe theyr woundes with salte water, other surgerye haue they none. In theyr bestes they are sayde to carry looking glasses: their swordes they tye to theyr beades, in suche wyse, that the handle doe rest vpon their shoulders. Seruice and ceremonies haue they none at all, onely they are wont to woozshyppe heauen. To *Aquita*, a great towne in that *Giaponische* kyngdome, we call *Genano*, they muche resort for merchandys, and the *Aquitanes* lyke wyse doe traueple into theyr country, howbeit not often, for that there many of them are slayne by the inhabitants.

Muche more concernyng this matter I had to wyte, but to anoyde tediousnesse, I will come to speake of the *Giapans* maner-
 nesse agayne, who most desirous of dayne glory, doe thinke than specially to great immortall fame, whan they procure them selues to bee most sumptuously and solempnely buried, theyr burpalles and obsequies in the citie *Meaco*, are done after this maner. About one houre before the dead body be brought forth, a great multitude of his friendes, apparelled in theyr best aray, go before unto the sepulchre, with them goe theyr kyn women, and such as bee of theyr acquaintance, clothed in whyte (for that is the mourning colour there) with a changeable coloured bayle on theyr heades. The woman hath with her ass, accorpyng to her abilitye, all her house expynned by in whyte like the coc-
 cadon

The *Giapans*
 with Funerals.

LI.

Lden. The Bodleian.
 Bancroft Library.

eado: the better sorte and wealthier women goe in letters of *Ce-
 dar*, artificially wrought, and richly dressed. In the seconde place
 marcheth a great company of footemen sumptuously apparelled.
 Than a far of commeth one of these *Bonzii*, maister of the cerimo-
 nies for that superstition, brauely clad in silkes & golde, in a large
 & high lpytter excellently wel wrought, accompanied with 30. o-
 ther *Bonzii*, or thereabout, wearing hattes, linnen albes, and fyne
 blacke upper garments. Than attired in ashe colour (for this co-
 lour also is mourning) with a long torch of pineaple, sheweth the
 dead body the way vnto the fyre, least it either stumble, or igno-
 rantly goe out of the way. *Uelneare*. 200. *Bonzii* folow him sin-
 ging the name of that deuill the which the partie deceassed chiefly
 did woo:ship by his life tyme, and therewithall a very great baten
 is beaten, euen to the place of fyre, in need of a bel. Than folow two
 great paper baskets hanged open at staues cndes, full of paper
 roses diuersly coloured: such as beare them, doe march but slow-
 ly, shaking euer now & than their staues, that the aforesaid floures
 may fall doune by litle & litle, as it were dropes of rayne, and
 be whirled about with the wynd. This houre say they is an argu-
 ment that the soule of the dead man is gone to *Paradyse*. After
 all this, eight beardles *Bonzii* orderly two and two dragge after
 them on the ground long speares, the pointes backwarde, with
 flagges of one cubite a peece, wherin the name also of that *Idole*
 is wrytten. Than be there carried ten *Lanternes* trimmed with
 the former inscription, ouercast with a fine bayle, and candelles
 burning in them. Besides this, two young men clothed in ashe co-
 lour, beare pineaple torches, not lighted, of three foote length, the
 which torches serue to kindle the fyre wherein the dead coppes is
 to be burnt. In the same colour folow many other that weare on
 the crownes of their heades sayre, litle, threesquare, blacke lychen
 caps, tied fast vnder their chyns (for *h* is honorable amongst them)
 with papers on their heads, wherin the name of *h* deuill, *I* spake
 of, is wrytten. And to make it the more solempne, after commeth
 a man with a table one cubite long, one foote broad, couered with
 a very fine whyte bayle, in both sides wherof is wrytten in golden
 letters the aforesaid name. At the length by foure men is brought
 forth the coryes sitting in a gorgeous lpytter, clothed in whyte,
 hanging doune his head, and holding his hands together like
 out

one that prayed: to the rest of his apparell may you see an upper gowne of paper, written full of that booke the which his God is sayd to haue made, when he liued in the world, by whose helpe and merites commonly they doe thinke to bee saued. The dead man his children come next after him most gallantly set forth, the yongest wherof carrieth lykewyse a pineaple torch to kindle the fyre. Last of all foloweth a great number of people in such cappes as I erst spake of.

When they are all come to the place appointed for the obsequie, all the *Bonzii* with the whole multitude, for the space of one hour, beating pannes & basens with great clamors, call vpon the name of that deuil, the which being ended, the obsequie is done in this maner. In the midst of a great quadrangle, rayled about, hanged with course hymnen, and agreeably vnto the foure partes of the world, made with foure gates to goe in and out at, is digged a hole: in the hole is layde good store of wood, whereon is rayled gallantly a waued rooke, before that stande two tables furnished with diuers kindes of meates, especially dry figges, Pomegranates, and cirtes good store, but neyther fyre nor flethe: vpon one of them standeth also a chaffee with coles, and in it sweete wood to make perfumes. When all this is ready, the corde wherewith the pytter was carried, is thowen by a long rope into the fyre: as many as are present stryue to take the rope in their handes, vsing theyr aforesayd clamors, which done, they goe in procession as it were rounde about the quadrangle thysle. Then setting the pytter on the wood buylte vp ready for the fyre, that *Bonzius* who than is maister of the ceremonies, sayeth a verse that no bodie there vnderstandeth, whysling thysle about ouer his head a torche lyghted, to signifie thereby that the soule of the dead man had neyther any begynnyng, ne shall haue at any tyme an ende, and thoweth away the torch. Two of the dead man his children, or of his neare kynne, take it by agayne, and standyng one at the East syde of the pytter, the other at the West, doe for honour and reuerence, reache it to eche other thysle ouer the dead coppes, and so cast it into the pyle of wood: by and by they thowen in oyle, sweete wood, and other perfumes, accordyngly as they haue plenty, and so with a great flame byng the coppes to ashes: his children in the meane

Lii.

thysle

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

whyle putting sweete wood into the Chaffin at the table, with
 whores, doe solemnely and religiously worshipping their father as
 a Saint: which being done, the *Bonzii* are payde eche one in
 his degree. The maister of the ceremonies hath for his part fyue
 ducates, sometimes ten, sometimes .xx. the rest haue ten *Julies* a
 peece, or els a certayne number of other presentes called *Caxa*.
 The meate that was ordeyned, as soone as the dead coppes
 friendes and all the *Bonzii* are gone, is left for such as serued at
 the obsequie, for the poore, and impotent lazares.

The next day returne to the place of obsequie the dead man
 his chyldren, his kynread, and friendes, who geathering vp his
 ashes, bones, and teeth, doe put them in a gylded pottle, and so
 carry them home, to be set vp in the same pot couered with cloth,
 in the mydd of theyr houses. Many *Bonzii* returne lykewise
 to these private funeralles, and so doe they agayne the seventh
 day, than carry they out the ashes to bee buryed in a place ap-
 pointed, laying therevpon a fouresquare stone, wherein is
 wrytten in great letters, drawen all the length of the stone ouer,
 the name of that deuill the which the dead man worshipped by
 his lyfe tyme. Every day afterwarde his chyldren resorte vnto
 that graue, with roses and warme water, that the deade coppes
 thirst not. For the seventh day onely, but the seventh moneth,
 and yeere, within theyr owne houses they renue this obsequie,
 to no small commodities and gayne of the *Bonzii*: great ryche
 men doe spende in these theyr funeralles, 3000. ducates, or there
 about, the meaner sorte two or thre hundred. Suche as for
 pouertie be not able to go to that charges, are in the nyght tyme,
 barkeloug without ail pompe & ceremonies, buryed in a dunghil.

They haue an other kynde of burfall, especially neare the
 sea syde, for them that bee not yet deade. These felowes
 are such, as haupng religiously with much deuotion worshipped
Amida, now desirous to see him, doe slaye them selues. And
 first they go certayne dayes begging almes, the which they thrust
 into theyr eues, than preache they in publyke a sermon vnto
 the people, declaring what they mynd to doe, with the great good
 lykng of all suche as doe heare them: for every body wondreth
 at such a kynd of holynesse. Than take they hookes to cut downe
 theyrs

byers and choynes that myght hinder them in theyr way to beauen, and so imbarke them selues in a newe vessell, tyeing great stones about their neckes, armes, loynes, thigges, and feete: thus they launchyng out into the mayne sea, be epyther drowned there, theyr shyppe bouged for that purpose, or els doe cast them selues ouer boorde headlong into the sea. The emptye barke is out of hande set a fyre, for honour sake, by theyr friendes that folowe them in an other boate of their owne, thynkyng it blasphemie that any mortal creature should afterward once touche the barke that had been so religiously halowed.

Truely whan we went to *Meaco*, eyght dayes before we came to the Isle of *Hiu*, at *Fore* towne, sixe men and two women so dyed. To all suche as dye so, the people erecteth a Chappell, and to eche of them a pyllar and a pole made of pinaple, for a perpetuall monument: hangyng by many sheddies of paper in stiches all the rooffe ouer, with many verses set downe in the walles, in commendation of that blessed company. Wherefoze vnto this place both day and nyght many come very superstitiously in pylgrimage. It happened euen then as *Aloisius Almeida* & I went to *Christen* a chyld, we traueyled that way, at what time foure or fise olde women came forth out of the aforesaide Chappel with beades in theyr handes (for in this pointe also the deuyll counterfayteth Christianitie) who partly scoined at vs for folly, partly frowned and taunted at our small deuotion, for passing by that holy monument, without any reuerence or woozshyp done therevnto at all.

It remaineth nowe we speake two or three woordes of those Sermons the *Bonzii* are wont to make, not so many as ours in number, but assuredly very wel provided for. The Pulpit is erected in a great Temple with a lilke Canapie ouer it, therein standeth a costly seate, before the seate a table with a bel & a booke. At the houre of sermon, eche secte of the *Giapans* resorteth to theyr owne doctours in diuers Temples. They goeth the doctour into the Pulpit, and beyng set downe, after that he hath Lordlyke looked him about, signifieth silence with his bell, and so readeth a fewe woordes out of that booke we spake of, the which he expoundeth afterwarde moze at large. These preachers be for the most parte eloquent, and apte to brayne with their speach the myndes of their

Ll iii

hearers.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Ilande

bearers. Wherefore to this ende chiefly, suche is theyr greedy-
 nesse, tendeth all theyr talke, that the people be brought under the
 colour of godlinesse to enryche theyr monasteries, prompting to
 eche one so much the more happinesse in the lyfe to come, howe
 much the greater coltes & charges they be at in church matters &
 obsequies: notwithstanding this multitude of superstitious sects
 and companyes, and the diuersities therof amongst them selues:
 yet in this principally all theyr superintendentes doe traueyle, so
 to perswade theyr Nouices in their owne tales and lyes, that they
 thinke nothing els trueth, nothing els sure to come by euerlasting
 saluation, nothing els woorth the hearyng. Wherunto they adde
 other subtilities, as in going, grauitie: in countenance, apparel,
 and in all other outward shewe, comelynesse. Wherby the *Gia-*
panes myndes are so noulled in wicked opinions, and doe con-
 cepue thereby such trust and hope of euerlasting saluation, that
 not onely at home, but also abrode in euery cozner of the towne,
 continually almost they runne ouer their beades, humbly asking
 of *Amida* and *Xaca* wealth, honour, good health, and euerlastyng
 ioyes. Thus than, deare brethren, may you thinke howe greatly
 they neede the helpe of God, that epyther doe bying the Gospel in-
 to this countrey, or receiuing it brought vnto them, do forsake *I-*
dolatry, & ioyne them selues with *Christ*, being assailed by so ma-
 ny snares of the deuil, troubled with the dayly dissuasions of their
Bonzii, and finally so iniuriouly, so hardely, so sharply vexed of
 their kindred and friendes, that except the grace of God obtey-
 ned by the sacrifices and prayers of the Catholike church do help
 vs, it can not be chosen, but that the fayth and constancie of many,
 if not of all, in these first beginninges of our churches, will great-
 ly be put in iopardie. So much the more it standeth you bypon,
 that so earnestly long for the health of soules, to commende specia-
 lly these *Giaponish* flockes vnto our *Lorde*.

We came to *Saciao*, the .xxviii. of *January*. *Aloy-*
sus Almeida first for businesse, but afterwarde let by sicknesse,
 layed there some twayne, but *I* parting the next day from thence,
 came thirtene leagues of, to *Macao* the last of *January*. Of my
 commyng all the *Christians* tooke great comfort, but specially
Gasper Vilela, who in six yeeres had seene none of our company at
Macao: his yeeres are not yet fouctie, but his gray beares shewe
 him

him to bee seuentie, so vehemently is his litle body afflicted and
wozne with extreme colde. He speaketh *Giapanish* so skilfully af-
ter the phrase of *Meaco* (the which for the renoune of this peo-
ple, and royall seat of the kyng is best accompted of) that he doth
both confesse & preach in that language. Certayne godly bookes
also he hath done into that speech, not omitting to translate other
as leasure suffreth him. To make an end, our Lord for his good-
nesse vouchsafe to preserve vs all continually, and to giue vs ayde
both rpyghtly to interpret his wil, and well to do the same. From
Meaco the. xix. of February. 1565.

Other suche lyke matter is handled both in other his letters,
and also in the Epistles wrytten by his companions, to be seene
at large in the aforesayde volume. Amongst the rest this seemed
in my iudgement one of the principall, and therefore the rather
I tooke vppon me to doe it into Englyshe.

Of the Isles beyond Giapan, in the way from
China to the Moluccas.



Amongst other Isles in the Asian sea, be-
twixt *Cantan* a *Chinishe* haven in *Cathayo*,
and the *Moluccas*, muche spoken of in the
Indish histories, & paynted out in *Mappes*,
Ainan and *Santlianus*, are very famous.

Ainan standeth nineteen degrees on
this syde of the Equinoctial lync neare *Chi-
na*, from whence the *Chinishe* nation haue theyr prouision for
shyping and other necessaries requisite for theyr Naue. There
stayed *Baltasar Gagus*, a great traueyler, sixe monethes, who de-
scribeth that place after this maner. *Ainan* is a goodly countrey,
full of *Indish* frutes, and all kynde of victualles, besydes
great store of *Iuelles* and *pearle*, well inhabited, the houses
buylt of stone, the people rude in conditions, apparelled in
diuersly coloured rugges, with two Dre boynes, as it were,
made of fyne cypres hanging downe about theyr eares,

and

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Ilande

and a payre of sharpe cyzers at theyr foreheades.

The cause wherefore they goe in suche attyre, I could not vnderstande, except it be for that they doe counterfaite the deuyl in the fourme of a brute beast, offering to him by them selues,

stianum.

Santianum. is an Ile neare vnto the haueu *Canton*, in the confines lykewyse of *China*, famous for the death of that woorthie trauepler, and godly professour, and paynesfull doctor of the *Indyshe* nation, in matters concerning religion, *Francis Xavier*, who after great labours, many iniuries, and calamities infinite suffred with much pacience, singular ioye and gladnesse of mynd, departed in a cabben made of bowes and tushes bypon a desarte mountayne, no lesse voyde of all worldly commodities, than endued with all spirituall blessings, out of this lyfe, the seconde day of December, the yeere of our Loyde. 1552. after that many thousandes of these Easterlynges were brought by him to the knowledge of *Christ*. Of this holy man, his perticular vertues, and specially traueple, and wonderfull workes in that region. of other many litle Isles, yet not so litle but that they may ryght well be written of at leasure, all the later histories of the *Indyshe* regions are full.

FINIS.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frostie Seas, and
 kyngdoms lying that way, declared by the Duke of
 Moscouia his ambassadour, to a learned Gentle-
 man of Italie, named Galeatius Butrigarius:
 likewise of the viages of that worthie old man
 Sebastian Cabote, sometymes gouernour
 of the companie of the Merchantes
 of Cathay, in the Citie of
 London.



LIt is doubtlesse a maruelous thyng to con-
 sider what changes and alterations were
 caused in all the Romane Empyre by the
 Gothes and Vandales, and other Barbari-
 ans into Italy. For by their inuasions were
 extingwyshed all artes and sciences, and all
 trades of Merchandies that were used in
 dyuers partes of the worlde . The desolation and ignoraunce
 whiche ensued hereof, continued as it were a cloude of perpetuall
 darkenesse among men for the space of foure hundred
 yeeres and moze, insomuche that none durst aduenture to goe
 any whyther out of theyr owne native countreys : whereas
 before the incursions of the sayde Barbarians, when the Ro-
 mane Empyre flozysed, they myght safely passe the seas to all
 partes of East India, whiche was at that tyme as well known
 and frequented, as it is now by the nauigations of the Por-
 tugales . And that this is true, it is manifest by that whiche
 Strabo wytteth, who was in the tyme of Augustus and Ti-
 berius . For speakyng of the greatnesse and ryches of the ci-
 tie of Alexandria in Egypt (gouerned then as a prouince of
 the Romanes) he wytteth thus . This onely place of Egypt,
 is apte to receyue all thynges that come by sea, by reason of
 the commoditie of the haue, and lykewyse all suche thynges
 as are brought by lande, by reason of the ryuer of Nilus,
 whereby they may bee easely conueyed to Alexandria, being
 by

The Romane
 Empyre.

4. hundred
 yeeres of ig-
 noraunce,

East India
 well known
 in olde tyme.

Strabo.

The great rye
 cheate of
 Egypt.

The citie of
 Alexandria.

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

Macnepious
recheffe.

The gover-
naunce and
reuenues of the
Romanes.
Troglobitica.
and India.
The gulfe of
Arabia.

Ethiops.

Rich customs.

The recheffe
whiche were
brought in
the time from
India and the
redde sea.

The commi-
on of Tempe-
rours Marcus
and Comod-
us.

by these commodities the richest citie of merchauntes that is in the worlde. The reuenues of Egypt are so great, that Marcus Tullius sayth in one of his orations, that kyng Ptolemeus, surnamed Auleta, the father of queene Cleopatra, had of reuenues twelue thousande and fyue hundred talentes, whiche are seuen millions and a halfe of golde. If therefore this kyng had so great reuenues when Egypt was gouerned of so fewe and so negligently, what might it then be woorth to the Romanes, by whom it was gouerned with great diligence, and theyr trade of merchandies greatly increased by the traffike of Troglobitica and India: whereas in tyme past there coulde hardly be founde. xx. Shyppes togeather that durst enter into the gulfe of Arabie, or shewe theyr prowesse without the mouth of the same. But at this present, great nauies sayle togeather into India, and to the furthest partes of Ethiops, from whence are brought many rich and precious merchandies into Egypt, and are caried from thence into other countreys. And by this meanes are the customes redoubled, aswel by such chynges as are brought thicher, as also by suche as are carped from thence, forasmuche as great customes arple of thinges of great value. And that by this voyage infinite and pretious merchandies were brought from the redde sea and India, and those of dyuers other sortes then are knownen in our tyme, it appeareth by the fourth volume of the ciuile lawe, wherein is described the commission of Temperours, Marcus and Commodus, with the rehearsall of all such stuffe and merchandies, wherof custome shoulde be payde in the redde sea, by suche as had the same in fee farme, as were payde the customes of all other prouinces partaynyng to the Roman Empire: and they are these folowynge.

Cinamome.
Long pepper.
Whyte pepper.
Cloues.
Costus.
Cancom.
Spikenarde.
Callia.
Sweete perfumes

Filocassa.
My.
Amome.
Ginger.
Galabatum.
Ammoniac.
Galbane.
Laster.
Agarthe.

Summe

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Summe of Arabia.

Cardamome.

Filocinamome.

Carpello.

Spikes of diuers soyes.

Lymen cloth.

Skynnes and Furrer of Par-
thia and Babylon.

Iuorie.

Wood of Heben.

Precious stones.

Pearles.

Ieweltes of Sardonica.

Ceraunia.

Calamus Aromaticus.

Also that iuyce or hquour whiche is gathered of wooll, and of
the beare of the Indians.

Berille.

Cilindro.

Gloues.

Cloth of Sarmatta.

The sylke called Petara.

Vestures of sylke.

Dyed cloth, and sylke.

Carbaset.

Sylke threede.

Selded men.

Poppingayes.

Lions of India.

Leopardes.

Panthers.

Purple.

By these woordes it doeth appeare, that in olde tyme the said
navigation by the way of the red sea, was wel knowne, & muche
frequented, & perhaps more then it is at this present: Insomuch
that the ancient kynges of Egypt, consydering the great profite
of the customes they had by the viages of the red sea, and wylling
to make the same more easie & commodious, attempted to make
a fosse or chanel, which should begin in the last part of the said sea,
where was a cite named *Arfinoe* (which perhappes is that that
is nowe called *Sues*) and shoulde haue reached to a branch of the
riuer of *Nilus*, named *Peluso*, whiche emptyeth it selfe in our sea
towarde the East, about the cite of *Damiata*. They determined
also to make three cauleys or hygh wayes by land, which shoulde
passe from the sayd branch to the cite of *Arfinoe*: but they founde
this too difficult to byng to passe. In fine, king *Ptolomeus* surna-
named *Philadelphus*, ordeyned another way, as to saye vppon
Nilus, agaynst the course of the riuer, vnto the cite of *Copto*,
and from thence to passe by a desert countrey, vntyl they come a-
boue the red sea, to a cite named *Berenice*, or *Mioformo*, where
they imbarked al their merchandise and wares for *India*, *Fibiope*,
and *Arabie*, as appeareth by the wyrtynge first of *Strabo* (who
wyrteth that he was in Egypt) and then by *Plinie*, who was in
the

The great riches the kings
of Egypt had
by customes.

The noble em-
perours of the
kings of Egypt
Arfinoe.
Damiata.
Peluso.

Nilus.
Copto.

Berenice.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frosty sea

A nauigable
trench made
from Egypt to
the red sea.

Lacus amari.

King Sesoſtre.

King Pſammis-
ticus.

King Darius.

King Ptolom-
eus.

The citie
Heroum.

What Plinie
writeth of the
nauigable
trench.

The largeneſſe
and lengry of
the trench.

the tyme of *Domitian*. *Strabo* alſo, ſpeaking of the ſaide ſoſſe of trench whiche was made towarde the redde ſea, wryteth thus, There is a trench that goeth towarde the red ſea, & the gulfe of *Arabie*, and to the citie of *Arſinoe*, whiche ſome call *Cleopatryda*, and paſſeth by the lakes named *Amari* (that is) bytter, becauſe in deede they were ſpyte bytter: but after that this trench was made, and the ryuer entred in, they became ſweete, and are at this preſent full of foules of the water, by reaſon of their pleaſantneſſe. This trench was ſpyte begunne by king *Sefoſtre*, befoze the battaile of *Troy*. Some ſay that it was begunne by king *Pſammiticus*, while he was a childe, and that by reaſon of his death it was left imperfect: alſo, that afterwarde, king *Darius* ſucceeded in the ſame enterpriſe, who woulde haue finiſhed it, but yet brought it not to the ende, becauſe he was enſourmed that the redde ſea was higher then *Egypt*, and that if this lande (diuiding both the ſeas) were opened, all *Egypt* ſhoulde be drowned thereby. King *Ptolomeus* woulde in deede haue finiſhed it, but yet left it ſhut at the head, that he myght, when he woulde, ſayle to the other ſea, and returne without peryll. Here is the citie of *Arſinoe*, and neare vnto that, the citie called *Heroum*, in the be- termſt parte of the gulfe of *Arabie*, towarde *Egypt*, with many portes and habitations. *Plinie* likewiſe, ſpeaking of this trench, ſayth, In the furtheſt part of the gulfe of *Arabie*, is a port called *Danco*, from whence they determined to bypne a nauigable trench vnto the riuer of *Nilus*, whereas is the firſte *Delta*. Betweene the ſaide ſea and *Nilus*, there is a ſtreit of lande of the length of *lxii*. milles. The firſte that attempted this thing, was *Sefoſtre* king of *Egypt*, & after him *Darius* king of the *Persians*, whom *Ptolomeus* folowed, who made a trench a hundred foote large, and thirtie foote deepe, being *CCC*. milles in length, vnto the lakes named *Amari*, and durſt proceede no further for feare of inundation, hauing knowledge that the red ſea was higher by three cubites then all the countrey of *Egypt*. Other ſay that this was not the cauſe: but, that he doubted that yf he ſhoulde haue let the ſea come any further, all the water of *Nilus* ſhoulde haue been thereby corrupted, whiche onely miniſtreth bynke to all *Egypt*. But notwithstanding, all theſe thinges aſozelapde, all this viage is frequented by lande from

from Egypt to the redde sea, in whiche passage are thre Causeyes or bygh wayes. The first begyneth at the mouth of Nilus, named *Peluis*: All whiche way is by the landes, insomuche that if there were not certayne bygh Reedes first in the earth, to shew the ryght way, the Causey could not be found, by reason the wynde ever couereth it with land. The seconde Causey is two myles from the mountayne *Cassius*: And this also in the ende of threescore myles, commeth vpon the way of Causey of *Peluisus*, inhabited with certayne *Arabians*, called *Antei*. The thyrde begyneth at *Gerro*, named *Adipson*: and passeth by the same *Arabians*, for the space of threescore miles, somewhat shorter, but full of rough mountaynes, and great scarcenesse of water. All these Causeyes, leade the way to the citie of *Arsmoe*, builded by *Prolemens Philadelphus* in the gulfe *Carandra* by the redde sea. This *Prolemens* was the first that searched all that part of the red sea, whiche is called *Trogodiica*. Of this trench, described of *Strabo* and *Plinie*, there are seene certayne tokens remaining at this present, as they do affirme whiche haue been at *Sues* beyonde the citie of *Alcayr*, otherwyle called *Babylon* in Egypt. But the merchantes that of later dayes traunple this biage by lande, ryde throughe the drye and barren desertes, on Camels, both by day and by nyght, directyng theyr waye by the starrs and compasse, as do mariners on the sea, and carryng with them water sufficient for many dayes toyneys. The places of *Arabie*, and *India*, named of *Strabo* and *Plinie*, are the selfe same where the *Portugales* practyse theyr trade at this day, as the maners and customes of the *Indians* doo yet declare: for euen at this present their women use to burne them selues asyue with the dead bodies of their husbandes. Whiche thyng (as wytteth *Strabo* in his xv. booke) they dyd in olde time by a lawe, for this consyderation, that sometyme being in loue with other, they forlooke or poysoned their husbandes. And for as muche as accordyng to this custome, the olde Poet *Propertius* (who lyued about an hundred yeres before the incarnation of Christ) hath in his booke made mention of the contention that was among the *Indian* women, whiche of them shoulde be burne alyue with theyr husbandes. I haue thought good to subscribe his verses, whiche are these.

The biage by land from Egypt to the red sea.

What byng Prolemens discouered.

Mappe.

The biage to East India frequented in olde tyme. The custome and maners of the Indians.

Folio

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Polus Septentrionalis una maribus.
Quae aurora suis rubra colorat equis.
Nanque ubi mortifero iacta est fax ultima lecto,
Vxorum fufus stat pia turba comis.
Et certamen habent lecti, quae vina sequatur
Coniugium, pudor est non licuisse mori.
Ardent victricet. Et flammæ pectora præbent.
Imponuntque suis ora perusta viris.

As touchyng these viages both by sea and by lande to East India and Cathay, many thinges are wytten very largely by diuers autours, which I omit, because they parteyne not so much vnto vs as doth the viage attempted to Cathay by the north seas, and the coastes of Mosconia, discovered in our tyme by the viage of that excellent young man Rychard Chaunceller, no lesse learned in al mathematicall sciences, then an expert pilotte, in the yeere of our Lorde .155. As concernyng this viage, I haue thought good to declare by communication which was betweene the sayd learned man, *aleatius Butrigarius*, and that great philosopher and noble gentleman of Italie named *Hieronimus Fracastor*, as I fynd wytten in the Italian histories of navigations. As they were therefore conferrynge in matters of learnyng, and reasonyng of the science of Cosmographie, the sayde learned man, havyng in his hand an instrument of Astronomie, declared with a large oration howe much the worlde was bound to the kinges of Portugale, rehearshng the noble factes done by them in India, and what landes and Ilandes they had discovered, and howe by theyr navigations they made the whole worlde to hang in the ayre. He further declared of what partes of the ball, the earth remained yet vndiscovered: and sayde, that of the landes of the inferiour hemispherie, or halfe compass of the ball towarde the pole Antartike, there was nothyng knowen but that litle of the coaste of *Brasilis*, vnto the streight of *Mazellanus*: also a part of *Petru*: also a litle above *Africke* towarde the cape of *Bona Speranza*. Also that he marueyled without measure, that this thyng was no better considered of Christian Princes, to whom God hath depured this charge, havyng euer on theyr counsaill men of great learning, which may informe them of this sping, being so marueylous and noble, whereby they may obtayne gloze

The voyages to Cathay.

Rychard Chaunceller.

A learned discourse of the voyages.

The voyages of the Portugales.

The worlde hanging in the ayre.

What is knowen of the lower hemispherie.

The lande of Brasilis.

Peru.

The charge and duty of Christian Princes.

Note.

Eden. The Decades.
 Bancroft Library.

glozy and fame by vertue, and be imputed among men as gods, by better demerites then euer were *Hercules* & great *Alexander*, who traueyled onely into *India*: and that by makinge the men of this our Hemisphere knowne to them of the other halfe compasse of the ball beneathe vs, they myght by the tytle of this enterpryse, without comparifon, farre excell all the noble factes that euer were doone by *Iulius Caesar*, or any other of the *Romane Emperours*. Whiche thyng they myght easly byyng to passe, by assigninge colonies to inhabite diuers places of that Hemisphere, in lyke maner as dyd the *Romanes* in prouinces newly subdued: whereby they myght not onely attayne great riches, but also enlarge the *Christian sayth* and *Empire*, to the glozy of *God*, and confuson of *infidels*. After this, he spake of the *Ilande of Saint Laurence*, called in olde tyme *Madagascar*, whiche is greater then the realme of *Castile* and *Portugale*, and reacheth from the .xii. degree towarde the *Pole Antarkt*, vnto the .xxvi. degree and a halfe, lying Northeast from the cape of *Sona Speranza*, and partly vnder the lyne of *Tropicus Capricorni*, beyng wel inhabited, and of temperate ayre, with abundance of all thynges necessary for the lyfe of man, and one of the moste excellent *Ilandes* that is founde this day in the worlde: And that neuertheless there is nothing knowen thereof, except onely a fewe small *Hauens* by the sea syde, as the tyke ignorance remaineth of the greatest part of the *Ilandes of Taprobana, Ciana*, the more and the lesse, and infinite other. Then begynnyng to speake of the partes of our *Pole*, he caused the booke of *Plinio* to be brought hym, where diligently pondering the *lxvii. Chapter* of the seconde booke, he founde where he rehearseth the historie of *Cornelius Nepos*, by these wordes: That in his tyme one *Endorus* escappynge the handes of kynge *Lathyr*, departed from the gulfe of *Arabie*, and came by sea to the *Ilande of Calese*: Declaryng further, that whereas this narration was manye yeeres reputed for a fable, was nowe in our tyme, by the vertue of the *Portugales*, knowen to be true: And that lykewyse the same *Cornelius Nepos* reciteth, that at the tyme when *Quintus Metellus Celer* was *Proconsul* of *Lieutenant* for the *Romanes* in *Fraunce*, the kynge of *Suedia* gaue hym certayne *Indians*, whiche sayng out of *India* sayng *Indi*,
dile,

Hercules and Alexander.

The colonies of the Romans in regions subdued.

The great Ilande of Sainct Laurence or Madagascar.

The Ilands of Taprobana or Ciana. Plinio.

The historie of Cornelius Nepos.

Shippes of India driven into the sea of Germany.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of this northeft frofty sea.

ides were by tempest typpen to the coastes of Germanie. When he had redde these wordes, he proceeded, saying that the same thing myght be verified nowe in our tyme, if the princes which reside bypon that sea woulde endeuoure theyr industry and diligence to byping it to passe : and that there coulde not any nauigation be imagined so commodious and profitable to all Chri- stendom as this way might be, if by this voiage should be found open to India, to come to the rych country of *Cashay*, whiche was discovered nowe two hundred yeeres since by *Marcus Paulus*. Then takinge the globe in his hande, he made demon- stration that this voyage should be very shorte, in respect of that which the *Portugales* nowe folowe, and also of that which the *Spanyarde*s may attempt, to the *Landes of Molucca*. He declared furthermore, that the cite of *Zabyk*, beinge ryche and of great power, and situate bypon the sea of Germanie, and also accustomed with continual nauigations to trauaple the sea of *Norway* and *Gotblande*, and lykewyse the ryght noble kyng of *Polonie*, whose dominions, with his realme of *Lituania*, extende to the saide sea, should be apte to discover this secreter. But that aboute al other, the Duke of *Mosconia*, should per- fourme the same, with greater commoditie, & more facilitie then any other Prince. And here stayinge a while, he began to speake againe, and said. Nowe, soasmuch as we are come to this passe, me thinke it should seme a great discourteisie if I should not shew you al that I knowe, as touching this biage, whereof I greatly mused with my selfe many yeeres by occasion of the wordes of *Plinie*. Whereas therefore, beinge a young man, I was in Ger- manie in the cite of *Augusta*, it so chanced that in those dayes there came thither an ambassadour of the Duke of *Mosconia*, a man singulerly learned both in the Greeke tongue & the Latine, and of good experience in wordely thynges, havinge been sent to dyuers places by the sayde Prince, and one of his counsaile. Of whose learninge beinge aduertised, I sought his acquaintaunce, and talkinge with hym one daye of these *Indians*, typpen by fortune to the coastes of Germanie, and of the biage that myght be discovered by the North sea to the *Landes of Spices*, I perceyued that at the first he maruelled exceedingly, as at a thyng that he coulde neuer haue imagined. . . . This restinge a while

By enteryng
by the
sea may be
takene true
saime and
glosp.
Cathay disc-
uered by *Mar-*
cus Paulus.

The cite of
Zabyk.

The kyng of
Polonie.

The Duke of
Mosconia.

An ambassa-
dour from the
Duke of *Mos-*
conia.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

whyle in maner astonyshe in his secrete phantasie, hee tooke
 great pleasure therein, and sayde: forasmuch as the Portugales
 haue now compassed about all the South partes, supposed in old
 tyme to bee inaccessible by reason of great heate, why should
 we not certaynely thynke that the lyke may bee done about this
 parte of the North, without feare of colde, especially to men
 borne and brought vp in that clime: Yet procedyng further, he
 sayde, that if his Prince and maister had men that would ani-
 mate him to discover this byage, there was no Prince in Chri-
 stendome that myght doe it with moze facilitie. Then calling for
 a Mappe, in which was the discription of Moscouia, and the
 prouinces subiect to the same, hee declared that from the citie of
 Moscouia or Mosca, goyng towarde the Northeast for the space
 of ix. myles, they come to the ryuer of Volochda, and afterwarde
 by that, and folowynge the course thereof, to the citie of Vsting, so
 called, bycause the ryuer of Ing falleth into the ryuer of Succana,
 where they lose theyr owne names, and make the great ryuer
 Duina, and by that, leauyng on the ryght hande the citie of Colmo-
 gor, they sayle vnto the North Ocean. The which way, although
 it bee a long tracte, as moze then 800. myles, neuer thelesse he
 sayd that in sommer it myght comodiously be sayled. And that
 whereas it falleth into the sea, there are infinite woods of goodly
 trees, apte to make shyppes, and the place so conuenient for
 this purpose, that shypwyghtes and other skylfull woorkemen
 for all thinges beerevnto apperteynyng, may easly come out of
 Germanie: also, that the men which are bled to traueyle the sea
 of Germanie about the coastes of Gothlande, should bee best
 and most apte to attempt this enterpryse, bycause they are in-
 durate to abyde colde, hunger, and labour. He sayde further-
 moze, that in the court of his Prince, they haue muche know-
 ledge of the great Cam of Cathay, by reason of the continuall
 warres they haue with the Tartars, of whom the greatest parte
 gyue obedience to the sayd great Cam, as to theyr chiefe Empe-
 rour. He made also demonstration in the sayde carde by the
 Northeast, that being past the prouince of Permia, and the ryuer
 Pescora (which falleth into the North sea) & certeine mountaynes
 named Catena Mundi, there is the entrance into the prouince of
 Obdara, whereas is Vecchiadoro, and the ryuer Obo, which also
 falleth

The woodes
of the Arhals
labour of
Moscouia.

The way from
Moscouia to
the North O-
cean & Cathay

Molochda,
Vsting,
Ing,
Succana,
Duina,
Colmogor,
The North
Ocean.

Great woods.

Gothlande,

The Moscos
uirts haue
knowledge of
the great Cam
of Cathay.
Permia,
Pescora,
Catena mundi
Obdora,
Vecchiadoro,
Obo.

¶m.i.

Lion. The scales.
Bancroft Library.

falleth into the sayde sea, and it is the furthest border of
 Thempyre of the Prince of Moscouia. The sayde ryuer hath his
 originall in a great lake called *Chetbai*, which is the first habita-
 tion of the *Tartars*, that paye tribute to the great Cane. And
 from this lake for the space of two moneths byage (as they were
 credyibly informed by certayne *Tartares* taken in the warres) is
 the most noble citie of *Cambala*, beyng one of the chiefest in the
 Dominion of the great Cane, whom some call the great Cham.
 He also affirmed, that if shippes should be made on the coastes
 of the sayde sea, and sayle on the backe halfe of the coast thereof
 (which he knew by many relations made to his Prince, to reach
 infinitely towarde the Northeast) they should doubtesse in fo-
 lowyng the same, easily discover that countrey. Unto these
 woordes he added, that although there were great difficultie in
 Moscouia, by reason that the way to the sayde sea is full of thicke
 woods and waters, whiche in the sommer make great mary-
 shes, and impossible to be traueyled, as well for lacke of victuals,
 whiche can not there be founde, not for certayne dayes, but for
 the space of certayne monethes, the place beyng so solate with-
 out inhabitantes: neuerthelesse he sayde, that if there were with
 his Prince, onely two Spaniards or Portugales, to whom
 the charge of this viage should be committed, he no wayes doub-
 ted but that they would folowe it, and fynde it, soasmuch as with
 great ingeniousnesse and inestimable patience, these nations
 haue overcome much greater difficulties then are these, whiche
 are but litle in comparision to those that they haue ouerpasse, and
 doe ouer passe in all their viages to India. He proceeded, decla-
 ryng that not many yeeres since, there came to the courte of his
 Prince, an Ambassadour from pope *Leo*, named maister *Paulo*
Centurione, a Genuese, under byuers pretenses. But the princy-
 pall occasion of his commyng, was, because hee had conceived
 great indignation and hatred agaynst the Portugales: And ther-
 fore intended to proue if he could open any byage by land, wher-
 by shippes myght be brought from India by the lande of *Tar-*
taria, or by the sea *Caspium* (otherwyle called *Hircanum*) to *Mos-*
couia, and from thence to be brought in shippes by the ryuer
Riga, which runnyng by the countrey of *Linonia* falleth into the
 sea of *Germanie*: And that his Prince gaue eare vnto him, and
 cauled

The lake Che-
 shap
 The Tartars.

The citie of
 Cambala.

Note this sea
 is stre.

Difficult tra-
 ueylng in
 Moscouia.

Commendati-
 on of the Spa-
 niards and
 Portugales.

The hystorie of
 Paulus Cen-
 turio.

Of this reade
 more at large
 in the booke of
 Paulus Ho-
 mius.

Malice may
 doe more with
 some then
 be will.

The Caspian
 sea.
 Riga.
 Anonia.

caused the sayde voyage to be attempted by certaine noble men of
 Lords, of the *Carters* consynnyng next unto him. But the matters
 which were then betwene them, and the great defertes which
 they should of necessitie overpasse, made them leave of they
 enterprise: whiche if it had ben purposed by the coastes of this
 our North sea, it might haue been easily synished. The sayde
 Ambassadour continued his narration, saying that no man ought
 to doubt of that sea, but that it may be sayled sike monethes in
 the yere, forasmuche as the dayes are then very long in that
 clime, and hot, by reason of continuall reuerberation of the bea-
 mes of the Sunne, and shoyte nyghtes: And that this thing were
 as well woorthie to bee pproved, as anye other navigation,
 whereby many partes of the worlde, heretofore unknowen, have
 been discovered and brought to civillitie. And heere making an
 ende of this talke, he sayde: Let vs now omit this parte of *Pol-*
conia with his colde, and speake somewhat of that parte of the
 newe worlde, in whiche is the lande of *Bytcons*, called *Terra Bri-*
tomm, and *Baccalos*, or *Terra Baccalarum*, where in the yere
 1534. and 1535. *Iaques Cartier*, in two vyages made with three
 great French Gallies, founde the great and large countreys na-
 med *Canada*, *Ocheloga*, and *Sanguenai*: which reach from the 45.
 to the 51. degree, beyng well inhabited, and pleasaunt countreys,
 and named by him *Nova Francia*. And here staying a while, and
 hysyng by his handes, he sayde, Oh what doe the Christian prin-
 ces meane, that in suche landes discovered, they doe not assigne
 certayne colonies to inhabite the same, to byng those people
 (whom God hath so blessed with naturall giftes) to better civili-
 tie, and to embrace our religion, then the whiche, nothing can bee
 more acceptable to God: The sayd regions also, beyng so fayre
 and fructfull, with plentie of all sortes of cozne, hearbes, frutes,
 wood, spyces, beastes, metals, and ryuers of suche greatnesse
 that theyppes may sayle more then 180. myles upon one of them,
 beyng on both sydes infinitely inhabited: And to cause the go-
 vernours of the sayde colonies to searche whether that lande to-
 wards the North, named *Terra de Labrador*, doe ioyne as one
 firme lande with *Norway*: Or whether there bee any streight
 or open place of sea, as is most lykly there should be, forasmuch as
 it is to bee thought that the sayde *Indians*, bypore by fortune

The Carters
 of Audo,
 Defertes.
 The voyage
 the North sea.

The woorthi-
 nesse of this
 voyage.

The vyages of
 the french
 men to the
 lande of *Bac-*
calans.

Pleasaunt
 countreys,
Nova Francia,
 Apothrophe
 to the Christi-
 an Princes.

Great ryuers.

if theyng woorth-
 thy to be sear-
 ched.

Spin.ii.

about

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

The way to Cathay and the Ilandes of Molucca by the North west. A notable enterprise. The noble enterprise of Antonio di Mendosza, viceroi of Mexico.

The discovering of the North west partes.

Shippes sayling from Cathay by the North West boream sea, to the coastes of the North west parte of the lande of Baccalaos. Cathay.

The sea from newe France to Cathay.

A notable booke.

about the coastes of Norway, came by that streight of sea, to the coastes of Germanie, and by the sayde streight to sayle north west, to discover the landes and countreys of Cathay, and from thence to sayle to the Ilandes of Molucca, and these surely should bee enterprises able to make men immortall. The which thing, that ryght woorthie Gentleman maister Antony di Mendosza considering, by the singular vertue and magnanimitie that is in him, attempted to put this thyng in practyse. For being viceroi of the countrey of Mexico (so named of the great citie Mexico, otherwyle called *Temistitan*, now called newe Spayne, being in the .xx. degree about the Equinoctiall, and parte of the sayde firme lande) he sent certeyne of his Captaines by lande, and also a nauie of shippes by sea, to search this secrete. And I remember that when I was in Flaunders in the Emperours court, I saw his letter wyrtten in the yere. 1541. and dated from Mexico: wherein was declared howe towarde the North west, he had founde the kyngdome of *Sette Citta* (that is) seven Citie, whereas is that, called *Ciuola*, by the reuerende father *Marco da Niza*: and howe beyonde the sayde kyngdome yet further towarde the North west, Captayne *Francesco Vasques* of *Coronado* hauing ouerpassed great desertes, came to the sea syde, where he founde certayne shippes which sayled by that sea with merchandies, and had in theyr banner vpon the prooes of theyr shippes, certayne foules made of golde and siluer, which they of Mexico call *Alcatraz*, and that theyr mariners shewed by signes that they were .xx. dayes sayling, in comyng to that hauen: whereby he vnderstoode that these shippes could be of none other countrey then of Cathay, forasmuch as it is situate on the contrary parte of the sayde lande discovered. The sayd maister Antonio wrote furthermore, that by the opinion of men well practised, there was discovered so great a space of that countrey vnto the sayde sea, that it passed .950. leagues, whiche make .2850. myles. And doubtlesse if the Frenche men, in this theyr newe France, would haue passed by lande toward the sayd North west and by North, they should also haue founde the sea whereby they myght haue sayled to Cathay. But about all thynges, this seemed vnto me most woorthie of commendation, that the sayde maister Antonio wrote in his letter, that he had made a booke of all the naturall

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

and marueylous thinges whiche they founde in searchyng those countreys, with also the measures of landes, and altitudes of degrees: A worke doubtlesse which sheweth a princely and magnificall mynd, wherby we may conceiue that if God had giuen him the charge of the other hemispherie, he would or now haue made it better knowne to vs. The which thing I suppose no man doth greatly esteeme at this tyme: beyng neuerthelesse the greatest and most gloriose enterpryse that may be imagined.

A great and
glorious en-
terpryse.

And heere making a certayne pause, and turnyng him selfe towarde vs, hee sayde, Doe you not vnderstande to this purpose, howe to passe to India towarde the Northwest wynde, as dyd of late a citizen of Venece, so valiant a man, and so well practised in all thinges perteynyng to nauigations, and the science of Cosmographie, that at this present hee hath not his lyke in Spayne, insomuche that for his vertues hee is preferred aboue all other pylottes that sayle to the West Indies, who may not passe thither without his lycence, and is therefore called *Piloto Maggiore* (that is) the graunde pylote. And when we sayde that wee knewe him not, hee proceeded, saying, that beyng certayne yeeres in the citie of Siuile, and desirous to haue some knowledge of the nauigations of the Spanyardes, it was tolde him that there was in the citie a valiant man, a Venecian boine, named *Sebastian Cabote*, who had the charge of those thinges, beyng an expert man in that science, and one that could make cardes for the sea with his owne hande: and that by this repozte, seekyng his acquayntaunce, hee founde him a very gentle person, who enterteined him friendly, and shewed him many thinges, and among other a large Mappe of the worlde, with certayne perticular nauigations, as well of the Portugales as of the Spanyardes: and that hee spake further vnto him, in this effecte. When my father departed from Venece, many yeeres since, to dwell in Englande, to solowe the trade of merchandyses, hee tooke mee with him to the citie of London, whyle I was very young, yet hauing neuerthelesse some knowledge of letters of humanitie, and of the sphere. And when my father dyed, in that tyme when netwes were brought that *Don Christopher Columbus Genuese*, had discovered the coasts of India, wherof was great talke in all the court of kyng Henry the seuenth,

Sebastian Cabote the grand pylote of the West Indies.

Commentation of Sebastian Cabote.
Sebastian Cabote tolde me that he was boine in Wyppflow, that at .iiii. yeeres olde he was carped with his father to Venice, and so returned as Capte into England with his father after certayne yeeres: wherby he was thought to haue ben boine in Venice.

¶ Item iii.

wha

Lden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

who then reigned: Insomuche that all men with great admiration affirmed it to be a thing more diuine then humane, to sayle by the West into the East where spyces growe, by a way that was neuer knowne before. By which same and report, there increased in my harte a great flame of desyre to attempte some notable thyng. And understanding by reason of the sphere, that if I should sayle by the way of the Northwest wynde, I should by a shorter tracte come to India, I thereupon caused the kyng to bee aduertised of my diuise: who immediately commaunded two Carauels to be furnished with all thinges apperteynyng to the vyage, which was as farre as I remember, in the yere. 1496. in the begynnynge of sommer. Beginning therefore to sayle toward Northwest, not thinking to fynde any other lande then that of *Cathay*, and from thence to turne toward India. But after certayne dayes, I founde that the lande ranne towarde the North, which was to me a great displeasure.ouerthelesse, saylyng along by the coast, to see if I could fynde any gulle that turned, I founde the lande styl continent to the. 56. degree vnder our pole: And seeing that there the coast turned toward the East, displaying to fynde the passage, I turned backe agayne, and sayled downe by the coast of that lande towarde the Equinoctiall (euer with intent to fynde the sayde passage to India) and came to that parte of this firme lande whiche is nowe called *Florida*. Where, my victualles saylyng, I departed from thence, and returned into Englande, where I founde great tumultes among the people, and preparance for warres in Scotlande: by reason whereof, there was no more consideration had to this vyage. Whereupon I went into Spayne, to the Catholyke kyng, and queene Elizabeth: who beyng aduertised what I had done, enterteyned mee, and at theyr charges furnished certayne shippes wherewith they caused mee to sayle to discover the coastes of Brasile, where I founde an exceedyng great and large ryuer, named at this present *Rio della Plata* (that is) the ryuer of siluer, into the whiche I sayled, and folowed it into the firme lande more then sixe hundred leagues, syndyng it euer where very fayre and inhabited with infinite people, whiche with admiration came rumpng dayly to our shippes. Into this ryuer, runne somany other riuers, that it is in maner incredible.

After

The first vyage of Sebastia Cabote.

The lande of Florida.

The seconde vyage of Cabote to the land of Brasile, and Rio della Plata.

Cabote tolde me that in a region within this ryuer he found. 50. grapes of

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

After this, I made many other voyages, whiche I now permit. And weying olde, I gave my selfe to rest from suche traucyles, because there are now many young and lusty Pilotes and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardnesse I doe reioyce in the fruites of my labours, and rest with the charge of this office as you see. And this is as muche as I haue vnderstoode of maister *Sebastian Cabote*, as I haue gathered out of diuers nauigations written in the Italian tongue.

whete in September, and gathered there of .50. thousande in Desember, as writeth also *Francisco Lopez*.

And whereas I haue before made mention howe *Holconia* was in our tyme discovered by *Richard Chancellor* in his viage toward *Cathay*, by the direction and information of the sayd maister *Sebastian*, who long before had this secreete in his mynd, I shall not neede heere to describe that viage, forasmuche as the same is largely and faythfully written in the Latine tongue by that learned young man *Clement Adams*, schoolemaister to the *Queenes* *Henshemen*, as he receyued it at the mouth of the sayd *Richard Chancellor*. Neuerthelesse, I haue thought good heere to speake somewhat of *Holconia*, as I haue redde in the booke of *John Faber*, written in the Latine tongue, to the ryght noble *Prince Ferdinando*, Archduke of *Austria*, and Infant of *Spayne*, of the maners and religion of the *Holcouites*, as he was partly instructed by the Ambassadors of the Duke of *Holcouie*, sent into *Spayne* to *Chemperours* maiestie, in the yere, 1525. He wytteth therefore as foloweth.

The viage to *Holconia*.

The history of *Holconia*.

I thinke it first conuenient to speake somewhat of the name of this region whereby it is called at this day, and howe it was called in olde tyme. Conferryng therefore the moste auncient of the Greeke and Latine monumentes with the histories of later tyme, I perceyue it to bee a thing whiche requirerth no small iudgement of wytte and learnyng. For we see in howe shorte tyme the names of thinges are chaunged, as are also the maners of men. I fynde therefore that those people whom at this day we commonly call *Holcouites*, were in tyme past (as wynteth *Plinie*) called *Roxolani*, whom neuerthelesse by chaungyng one letter, *Hecolome* in his eyght table of *Europe*, calleth *Rosolanos*; as doeth also *Strabo*. They were also many yeres called *Ruseni*; and are that people whiche sometyme fought manfully agaynst the *Captaynes*

The diuers names of *Holconia*.

Roxolani,
Rosolani,
Ruseni,

¶ *¶*

of

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeaft frostie sea,

of *Medbridates*, as *Strabo* writeth. They were called *Polcouites*, of the chiefe citie of all the prouince, named *Moscouia* or *Mosca*: or (as *Volaterane* sayeth) of the riuier *Mosco*. They were sometime gouerned by Duke *John*, whose wyfe was *Helena*, of the lynage of *The* Emperours of *Constantinople*, of the noble familie of the *Palcologi*. Beyond these *Roxolanos*, *Strabo* sayeth there is no lande inhabited. These *Ruthenians* therfore or *Polcouites*, are people of the Northeaft parte of the worlde from vs, and are determined with the limittes of the great riuier *Boristhenes* of *Scythia*; on the one syde with the *Lituanians* and *Poloniens*, and on the other syde with the *Tartars*, who ceasse not to vex them with continuall warres and incursions: Especially the great Emperour *Cham* of *Cathay*, the chiefe Prince of the *Tartars*, resydent by the sea syde in *Taurico Cherfonefo*, molesteeth them with soze warres. They are towarde the North syde inclosed with the frosen sea, the lande of whose coastes beyng very large, perteyneth in maner all to the dominion of the Duke of *Moscouie*. The sea is it whiche the olde wynters call *Lacus Cronicus*, so named of the Greeke woord *Cronos*, which the Latines call *Saturnus*, whom they sayne to be an olde man, of complexion colde and slowe, and thereby name all suche thinges as are colde and slowe, *Cronica*, as by lyke reason they byd this North sea, which beyng in maner euer frosen, is slow and cold, and in maner immoueable. And for lyke consideration (as sayth *Plinie*) *Heathens* nameth it in the *Scythian* tongue, *Amaltheum*, which woord signifieth as much as congealed or frosen. But that I wander not farre from my purpose: *The* Emperour and dominion of the Duke of *Moscouie*, reacheth so farre, that it comprehendeth certayne partes of *Asia*, and also of *Europe*. The citie of *Moscouia* or *Mosco*, is counted twofe as byg as *Colonia Agrippina*, as they saythfully repute which knowe both. Unto this they haue also an other, not vnequall in bygnesse, called *Fladimer*. Also *Blescouia*, *Nouogradia*, *Smolne*, and *Otifer*, all which, they Ambassadors asseyne to be of princely and magnificall buyltynges, and strongly defended with walles both of hyche and square stone. Of these, *Blescouia* is strongest, and emunroned with thre walles. Other whiche they haue innumerable, are not so famous as are these wherof this Duke of *Moscouie* and

The riuier Mosco.

The riuier Boristhenes.

The Emperour of Cathay.

The frosen sea.

Lacus Cronicus. Saturnus.

Amaltheum.

The dominion of the Duke of Moscouia.

The citie of Moscouia. The chiefe cities of Moscouia.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

and Emperoure of Russia taketh the inscription of his title. For
 euen at this present, when so euer, eyther by his ambassadours
 or his letters, he doth signifie hym selfe to be Emperour of
 Moscouie, he is accustomed to vse this title, *Basilus* by the
 grace of God Emperour of all *Russia*, and great Duke of *Flada-*
mer, *Moscouie*, *Nonigrade*, *Blasconia*, *Smolne*, and *Otifer*. &c.
 And this is the tyele whereby the sayde ambassadours saluted
 your maiestie in the name of great *Basilus* when they began
 theyr oration. This prince of *Moscouie*, hath vnder hym
 mynces of many prouinces, and those of great power: Of the
 whiche, that olde wyghte bearded man, whom this Emperour of
 the *Rusians*, sent for his ambassadoure to the Emperours ma-
 iestie into *Spaine*, is not one of the least. For euen he, when ne-
 cessitie of warre requireth, is accustomed to make for his Em-
 perour a bande of .xxx. thousand hoysenmen. But this is to their
 singular commendation, that they are so obedient to theyr prince
 in all thynges, that beyng sommoned by hym by neuer so meane
 an heralde, they obey incontinent, as if it were to god, thynk-
 ing nothing more glorious then to die in his quarrel of theyr prince.
 By reason of which obedience, they are able, in short tyme, to as-
 semble an army of two or thre hundred thousande men against
 theyr enemies, eyther the *Tartares*, or the great *Cham*.
 And haue hereby obtayned great victories and triumphes, as well
 agaynst the *Turks*, as the *Tartars*, by the exceeding multitude of
 theyr hoysenmen, and continual experience in warres. At such time
 as the Emperour *Maximilian* made a league with them, they kept
 warre against the kyng of *Polonie*. They vse not onely bowes
 and dartes, after the maner of the *Parthians*, but haue also the
 vse of gunnes as we haue. And to be briefe, only the *Moscouites*
 may seeme that nation which hath not felte the commodities of
 peace: Insomuch that if theyr region were not strongly descry-
 bed by the nature of the place, beyng impeignable, it had or now
 been oftentimes conquered. Theyr language agreeth muche
 with the tongue of *Bobemians*, *Croatians*, and *Sclauons*: so that
 the *Sclauon* doth playnely vnderstande the *Moscouite*, although
 the *Moscouian* tongue be a more rude and hard phrase of speech.
 The historiographers wyte that the *Sclauons* tongue tooke
 the name of the confusion whiche was in *Babel* in the tyme
 of

The Duke of
 Moscouie &
 Emperour of
 Russia.
 The duke of
 Moscouie his
 tyele.

Duke Basilius.

Their power.

Their obedie-
 nce to their
 prince.

Their warres
 & conquestes.

Gunnes.
 Only the *Mos-*
couites haue
 not felte the
 commodities
 of peace.

Their lan-
 guage.

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frosty sea

Dalmatia.

Pannonia.
Hungaria.

Their original.

The Dclation
tongue teach
eth sacre.

Great woods,
white beares
and blacke
woolues.
Abundance of
hony and
waxe.

Apch fures.

Their maner
of bargaining.

Rude & wilde
people.

Tartars.

of that stout hunter *Nemrob*, of whom mention is made in the *Genesis*. But I can not enough marueyle at this chyng, that whereas betwene *Dalmatia* (nowe called *Sclauonia*) and *Moscouia*, both the *Pannonies* are situate, yet this notwithstanding, the *Hungarians* tongue nochyng agreeth with the *Moscouites*. Whereby we may coniecture that these nations were sometymes diuided by legions, and that they came out of *Dalmatia* thither: whiche chyng also *Volateranus* affirmeth, saying that the language of the *Ruthenians* (whiche are the *Moscouites*) in *Semidalmatica* (that is, halfe *Sclauonia*) howe so euer it be, this is certaine, that the *Bobemians*, *Croations*, *Sclauons*, & *Moscouites*, agree in language, as we perceiued by thinterpretours whiche your maiestie had then in your court. For whereas the sayd interpetours were bozne among the *Croations* & *Sclauons*, and none of them had euer been in *Moscouia*, or before that tyme had any conuersation with them, yet dyd they well vnderstande the ambassadours wooddes. There are in *Moscouia*, wooddes of exceeding byggenesse, in the whiche blacke woolues and whyte beares are hunted. The cause whereof may bee chextreme colde of the North, whiche doth greatly alter the complexions of beastes, and is the moether of whitenesse, as the *Philosophers* affirme. They haue also great plentie of Bees, wherby they haue such abundance of hony and waxe, that it is with them of limale price. When the commoditie of theyr countrey is neglected by reason of long warres, their chiefe aduantage wherby they haue all chynges necessarie towarde theyr luyng, is the gaynes whiche they haue by theyr ryche fures, as *Sables*, *Parternes*, *Luzernes*, mott white *Armins*, and such other, whiche they sell to merchautes of dyuers countreys. They bye and sell with simple sayth of wooddes, exchanging ware for ware, without any curious bordes or cautels. And albeit they haue the vse of both golde and syluer mynes, yet do they for the moste part, exchange theyr fures for frutes, and other things necessarie to mainteine their life. There are also some people vnder the dominion of this Emperour, which haue neither wyne nor wheate, but lyeue only by fleshe and mylke, as do the wilde *Tartars* theyr borderers, which dwell in woods by the coastes of the frozen sea. These people are byltische,

and

and lyue in maner lyke wyld beasts. But they of the cite of *Mosca* and *Nonigrade*, and other cities, are ciuile people, and agree with vs in eating of fysh and fleshe, although they maner of coynage is in many thynges differing from ours. *Volaterane* wytteth that the *Rutbenians* vse money vncoynd. And enquiring further, I was informed that the money of *Hungary* is much currant with them. But this is cheeflye to be considered, that they embrace the *Christian* sayth, whiche they affirme to haue been preached to them first by *Saint Andrew* the Apostle, and by other to *Simon Peter*. Suche doctrine also as vnder *Constantine* the great, in the yeere. CCC. xliii. was concluded in the first generall counsaile holden in the cite of *Nicene* in *Bethynia*, and there determined by. CCC. xliii. Bishops, and also suche as hath been wyttten and taught by the Greeke Doctors *Basilus Magnus* and *Chisostomus*, they beleue to be so holy, fyne, and sincere, that they thynke it no moze lawfull one beare to transgresse or go backe from the same, then from the Gospell of *Christ*. For they constancie and modestie is suche, that no man dare call those thynges into question whiche haue once been decised by holy fathers in theyr general counsailes. They do therfore with a moze constant mynde perseuer in theyr first sayth, whiche they receiued of *Saint Andrew* thapostle, and his successoure and holy fathers, then do many of vs, beyng diuided into sectes and sectes, whiche thing neuer chaunceth among them. But if any difficultie chaunce to rise as touching the sayth or custome of religion, all is referred to the Archebishop and other bishops, as to be defined by theyr spirite: not permitting any iudgement to the inconstant and ignoraunt people. Their Archbishop is resident in the cite of *Mosca*, where also the Emperour keepeth his court. They haue lykewyse diuers other Bishops: as one in *Nonigradia*, where also *Isodorus* was Bishop vnder pope *Eugenius*. They haue an other in *Roscinia*, an other in *Sustali*, an other in *Otiferi*: also in *Smolne*, in *Resan*, in *Column*, and in *Volus*, all whiche haue theyr Dioces. They acknowledge theyr Archebishop as the cheefe. Before the patriarke of *Constantinople* was oppressed by the tyranny of the *Turkes*, this Archebishop recognised hym as his superior: Insomuche that this Duke of *Moscovia*, and Emperour

Ciuile people
in ciues.

Their money.

They embrace
the Christian
sayth whiche
they receiued of
the Apostles.

The counsaile
of Nicene.
Basilus
Magnus.
Chisostomus.

Their constan-
cie in theyr re-
ligion.

The bishops de-
fine controuer-
sies in religion.

Their bishops.

The Archbis-
hop.
The patriarke
of *Constantino-
ple*.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frosty sea

perour of *Russia*, not unmyndful hereof, but a diligent obseruer of his accustomed religion, doth at this daye yeerely sende a certayne Append, in manner of a shewe, to the Patriarke of *Constantinople*, that he may with more quiet mynde looke for the ende of this his *Egyptian* seruitude, until it shal please almightie God to restore hym to his former church and anochettie. For he iudgeth it much impietie, if he shoulde notwe forsake hym whose predecissors haue ruled and governed so many churches, and of whom the fayth and religion of so many regions and prouinces haue depended.

A notable example of a Christian Prince.

Their religion.

A Monasterie of ecc. Nunkes.

Priesters.

Masses.

A misterie.

The ystimate church.

A strange custome.

But to speake briefly of theyr religion, they agree in many thynges with vs, and in some thynges folow the *Greekes*. They haue Nunkes and religious men. Not farre from the citie of *Mosca*, they haue a great Monasterie, in the whiche are three hundred Nunkes, byyng vnder the rule of *Basilus Magnus*, in the which is also the sepulchre of *S. Sergius* the Abbot. They obserue theyr vow of chastitie, whiche none may breake that haue once professed. Yet such as haue married Virgins of good fame, may be admitted to theyr order of priesthood, but may neuer be a Nunke. The priestes and Bishops whiche are admitted to orders unmarried, may neuer after be married: nor yet such as haue wiues, marry agayne when they are dead, but liue in perpetual chastitie. Such as commit adulterie or fornication, are greuously punished by the Bishops, and depriued of the benefices. They celebrate masse after the manner of the *Greekes*, whiche differeth from ours in diuers thyngs, as in fermented bread, after the manner of the *Greekes*. They put in the Chalice as much water as red wine, which water they vse to heate, because (not without a great mysterie) there issued forth of the syde of our Lord, both blood and water, which we ought by good reason to thynke was not without heat: for els shoulde it scarcely haue been iudged for a miracle. In fine, they affirme that all theyr customes and rites are accordyng to the institutions of the primitive church, and the doctrine of *Basilus Magnus*, and *Christostomus*. In this thyng they differ greatly from vs, that they minister the communion to young chyldren of three yeeres of age, which they do with fermented bread dypt in a sponsefull of wine, and geue it to them for the bodye and blood of *Christ*.

A briefe

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

A briefe description of Moscouia, after the
later writers, as Sebastian Munster,
and Iacobus Gastaldus,



The prouince of *Moscouia*, is so named of
the ryuer *Mosco*, whiche passeth by the
metropolitane citie of *Moscouia*, called
Mosca by the name of the ryuer *Mosco*.
This prouince was called of the olde wri-
ters, *Sarmatia Asiatica*. The borderers
or confines to the *Moscouians* on the one
side towarde the East, are the *Tartars*, called *Nogai*, and the
Scianbanians, with the *Zagatians*. Towarde the West, the
prouinces of *Liuania* and *Lituania*. Towarde the South, the
ryuer of *Tanais*, and the people confining with the riuer of *Volga*,
called of the olde wyriters *Rba*. And towarde the North, the
Ocean sea, called the *Scythian sea*, and the region of *Lapponia*.
Moscouia is in maner all playne, and full of marshes, wooddes,
and many very great ryuers, whereof the ryuer of *Volga* is the
principall. Some call this *Ledil*, as the olde authours named
it *Rba*. It begynneth at the great lake called *Lacus Albus* (that
is) the white lake, and runneth into the sea of *Bachan*, named of
the auncient wyriters, the sea *Caspium* or *Hircanum*. Under
the dominion of *Moscouia*, are certayne regions and Duke-
domes: as *Alba Russia* (that is) *whYTE Russia*. Also *Colmogora*,
Plescouia, *Basuida*, *Nonogradia*, with also manie places of the *Tar-*
tars, whiche are subiecte to the Duke of *Moscouia*. The chiefe
cities of *Moscouia*, are *Mosca*, *Plescouia*, *Nonogradia*, *Colmogora*,
Otogeria, *Viatra*, *Smolensker*, *Percastania*, *Cologna*, *Volodemaria*,
Rossania, and *Cassam*. The people of *Moscouia* are *Christians*,
and haue great abundaunce of honny and waxe: also ryche fures,
as *Sables*, *Parternes*, *Foynes*, and dyuers other. All the
Tartars whiche inhabite towarde the East beyonde the ryuer
of *Volga*, haue no dwelling places, nor yet cities or Castles,
but cary about with them certayne cartes or wagens couered
with beastes hydes, vnder the whiche they rest, as we do in
our houses.

*Sarmatia
Asiatica.*

*The Scythian
Ocean.*

*The ryuer of
Volga.
Lacus albus.*

*The Caspian
sea.*

*The chiefe
cities.*

*The wyld
Tartars.*

They

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the northeft frosty sea.

Hordas.

They remone togeather in great compaynes, whiche they call *Hordas*. They are warlike people, and good hoysmen, and are all *Pacomestiles*.

The bygnes of the cite of Moscouia.

Sebastian Munster in his booke of *Uniuersall Cosmographie*, wyrteth that the cite of *Mosca* or *Mosconia* contepnerh in circuite .xiiii. myles, and that it is twyle as bygge as the cite of *Praga* in *Bohemie*. Of the countrey of *Mosconia*, besyde other prouinces subiecte to the same, he wyrteth thus: It extendeth in largenesse soure hundred myles, and is ryche in syluer. It is

Syluer. The region of Moscouia.

lawful for no man to go out of the realme, or come in, without the *Dukes* letters. It is playne without mountaynes, and full of woodds and marshes.

Beastes.

The beastes here, by reason of the colde, are lesse then in other countreys more southwarde. In the middest of the cite of *Mosca*, beyng situate in a playne, there is a *Castell* with .xvii. towres, and thye bulwarkes, so strong & sayre, that the lyke are scarcely seene in any other place. There are also in the *Castell* .xvi. churches, and thye very large courtes, in the whiche the noble men of the courte haue theyr lodgynges.

A sayre and strong castell in the cite of Mosca.

The Dukes pallaice. Theyr drynke.

The *Dukes pallaice* is buylded after the maner of the *Italian* buyldyng, and very sayre, but not great. Theyr drynke is mede and beere, as is the maner of the most part of the people that inhabite the *Ryth* partes of the woorld. They are exceedyngly geuen to *dyonhemesse*. *Pet* (as some saye) the princes of the lande are prohibyt on payne of death to absteyne from suche strong drynkes as are of force to inebriate, except at certayne times when licence is graunted them, as wyse or thise in the peere. They plowe the ground with hoyses, and plowes of wood.

They are geuen to dyonhemesse.

Coyne and grayne.

Theyr coyne and other grayne, by reason of long colde, do sel dome waze rype on the ground, by reason wherof they are sometimes inforced to rype & drye them in their stoues and hot houses, and then grynd them. They lacke wyne and oyle.

Stones.

The famous ryuer of Tanais.

Mosconia is extended vnto *Iurban* and *Corelia* which are in *Scythia*. The famous ryuer of *Tanais*, the *Moscouites* call *Don*, hauyng his springes and originall in *Mosconia* in the *Dukedome* of *Rezensc*. It ryseth out of a ground that is playne, baren, myddy, full of marshes and wooddes. And where it procedeth toward the East to the mountaynes of *Scythia* and *Tartarie*, it bendeth to the south: and comyng to the marshes of *Motis*, it

it falleth into them. The river of *Volga* (sometime called *Rha*, and now called of the *Tartars Edell*) runneth towards the North certaine miles, to whom is ioyned the river *Occa* or *Ossa*, flowing out of *Mosconia*, and then bendyng into the South, and encreased with many other rivers, falleth into the sea *Euxinum*, which divideth *Europe* and *Asia*.

The marshes of *Scythia*, *Volga*, *Ocha*.

The sea *Euxinum*.

The forest of *Hircania*.

Bri. *Alces*.

They traueyle in winter on sledges.

Causes of tynder.

Trees and fruites.

Corn and grapes.

Hony in woods and trees.

The wood or forest called *Hircania silua*, occupieth a small portion of *Mosconia*: Per is it somewhere inhabited, and by the long labour of men, made thynner and bare of trees. In that part that lieth toward *Prussia*, is a kinde of great & fierce *Bulles*, called *Vri* or *Byfons*, as writeth *Paulus Iouius*. There are also *Alces*, much lyke vnto *Hartes*, with long snoutes of flesh, and long legges without any bowyng of theyr hoys or pasternes. These beastes the *Mosconites* call *Lozzi*, and the *Almaines*, *Helones*. The loyney that is betweene *Vlna* of *Lituania* by *Smolense* to *Mosca*, is traueyled in winter on sledges, by the snow congeled by long frost, and made very slipperie and compact lyke *Ice*, by reason of much wearyng and treadyng, by meanes whereof this blage is perfourmed with incredible celeritie. But in the Sommer, the playne countreyes can not be ouercome without difficul't labour: For when the snow beginneth to be dissolved by continuall heate, it causeth marshes and quampyes inextricable and daungerous both for horse and man, were it not for certaine *Caulcis* made of timber with in maner infinite labour. The region of *Mosconia* (as I haue said) beareth neither *Vines* nor *Oliue* trees, nor yet any other trees that beare any apples or fruites of very pleasant and sweete sauour or tast, except *Cherry* trees, forasmuch as all tender fruites and trees, are burnt of the cold blasts of the North wynde. Per do the fieldes beare all kyndes of corne, as wheat, and the grayne called *Siligo*, whereof the fynest kynde of breade is made: also *Hyfle*, and *Panpcke*, whiche the *Italians* call *Melica*: A pkeuple all kyndes of pulse, as *Beanes*, *Peason*, *Cares*, and such other. But theyr cheefe harvest consisteth of *Hony* and *Waxe*, forasmuch as the whole region is replenished with fruitefull *Bees*, which make most sweete *Hony*, not in the hul band niens hyues, but euen in hollow trees. And hereby commeth it to passe, that both in the wooddes and shadowed laumes, are secne many swarmes of *Bees* hangyng on the

Lden. The decades.

Bancroft Library.

the holmes of trees, so that it shall not be necessarie to call them together, or charme them with the sound of Balsens. There are oftentimes founde great masses of Honey combes, conserved in trees of the olde Honey forsaken of bees, soasmuche as the husbandmen can not seeke every tree in so great and large woods: Insomuche that in the stocks or bodies of exceeding great and hollowe trees, are sometymes founde great pooles or lakes of Honey. *Demetrius* thambassadour of the Duke of *Mosconia*, whom he sent to the Bishop of Rome not many yeeres since, made relation that a husbandman of the countrey, not farre from the place where he remayned, seekyng in the woods for Honey, descended into a great hollowe tree full of Honeye, into the which he slypt by to the breast, and lyued there only with Honey for the space of two dayes, calling in vaine for helpe in that desert of woodds: and that in fine displaynyng of helpe, he escaped by a marvelous chaunce, being drawn out by a great Beare that descended into the tree, with her loynes downwarde after the maner of men. For when the man (as present necessitie and oportunitie serued) percepued the Beare to be within his reache, he suddenly clasped her about the loynes with his armes, and with a terrible crye prouoked the beast to enforce her strength to leape out of the tree, and therewith to drawe hym out, as it chaunced in deede. These regions abounde with Beares, whiche euerywhere seeke both Honeye and Bees, not only herewith to fyll theyr bellies, but also to helpe theyr syght: For theyr eyes are oftentimes dulled, and theyr mouthes wounded of the Bees: both which grieues are eased by eatyng of Honeye. They haue weakest heades, as Lions haue strongest: Insomuche that when (being thereto enforced) they cast them selues downe headlong from any rockes, they couer theyr heades with theyr feete, and lye for a tyme astonysed, and halfe deade with knockes. They walke sometymes on two feete, and spyle trees, backwarde. Sometyme also they invade Bulles, and so hang on them with all theyr feete, that they weere them with weight. The Beare (as sayeth *Plinie*) bringeth forth her byrth the thirtie day, and often tymes two. Theyr birth is a certaine white masse of flesh without forme, and litle bigger then a mouse, without eyes, and without heare, with only the naxles or claws

Lakes or pooles
of Honey.

A man almost
drowned in
Honey.

A merueylous
chaunce.

Beares feede of
Honey & bees.

Beares invade
Bulles.

The Beares
byrth.

does comming forth: but she vanne with continuall he-
 ping, by title and title figureth the indome bych. When she en-
 crech into the denne which she hath chosen, she creepeth up-
 per with her belly upwarde, least the place should be founde by
 the steppes of her feete. And being there deliuered of her bych,
 remaineth in the same place for the space of .xliij. dayes, immou-
 able as wyreth Aristotle. They lyue without meate .xl. dayes,
 and for that tyme susteyne them selues only by lyching and suck-
 yng theyr ryght foote. At the length chauncing to finde meate,
 they fill them selues so full, that they remedy that suscepte by
 vomite, which they mouke by eacyng of Antes. Theyr bych
 is oppressed with so heauy a sleepe for the space of .xliij. dayes,
 that it can not be rayled eithur with prickyng or woundes, and
 in the meane tyme growe exceeding fatte. After fourtiens dayes
 they wake from sleepe, and begyn to lyeke and luche the sides of
 theyr fore feete, and lyue thereby for a space: For yet is it
 apparent that they lyue by any other meate; untyll the spring
 tyme of the yere. At whiche tyme begynnyng to runne a-
 bynde, they feede of the tender budde and young sprynges of
 banches of trees, and other hardes correspondent to theyr
 byppes.

Before five hundred yeres, the Apostles honoured the
 Goddes of the Gentyles: And then byll receyued the Chylian
 faith when the Bishoppes of Grecia began to dissent from the
 church of the Latines: and thereafter receyued the rites of the
 Greekes. They minister the sacrament with fermented breade
 under both kyndes: And thinke that the soules of dead men are
 helped with the suffragens of quettes, myght by the deu-
 tion of theyr friends or byschope: Also that the place of Pur-
 gatorie is a fable. In the tyme of the diuine service, the byscho-
 ps of the myracles of Chyist, and the Epistles of S. Paul
 are reuokted out of the Pulpit. Beyond Moscovia, are
 many people which they call Scythians, and are partly sub-
 iecte to the Prince of Moscovia. These are they which Duke
 Juan subdued, as are the people of Persia, Bashyr, Cezyrenis-
 sa, Inbra, Corala, and Persusky. These people were Moscovia's
 before the Duke compelled them to baptize, & appointed a by-
 shop ouer them named Mattheus, whom the Moscovians after the

The Moscovians
 denne.

Moscovians
 without meate
 xl. dayes.

The shape of
 Moscovians.

... ..

The religion of
 the Moscovians.

The Scythians
 subject to the
 Duke of Moscovia.

Mat.

departure

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

departure of the Duke, stayed apace, and slow. But the Duke returning shortly after, afflicted them sore, and assigned them a newe bishop.

It is here also to be noted, that the olde Cosmographers sayed, that in these regions toward the North pole, there should be certayne great mountaynes, which they called *Tyberis* and *Hyperboreos*, which nevertheless are not founde in nature. It is also a fable, that the ryuers of *Tanis* & *Felbon* doe spring out of high mountaynes, whereas it is apparent that both these ryuers, and many other, haue their originall in the playnes.

It was then
an opinion
that all ryuers
spring out of
mountaynes.
The fruitful
region of Col-
mogora.
The great ry-
uer Diuidna.

Next to *Dolocorta*, is the fruitful region of *Colmogora*, through the whiche runneth the ryuer of *Diuidna*, being the greatest that is knowen in the North partes of the world. This ryuer increaseth at certayne tymes of the yere, as woth the ryuer of *Nilus* in *Egypte*, overfloweth the fieldes rounde about, and with aboundance of fatte moystrure, resisteth the coldness of the ayre. Wheate sowne in the grounde, groweth abundantly without ploughyng: and fearyng the newe inturie of the moude ryuer, springeth, groweth, and rypeth, with wonderfull celeritie of hallyng nature.

Wheat is with-
out plowing.

The ryuer of
Inga,
in *Inga*.

Into the ryuer of *Diuidna* runneth the ryuer of *Inga*: And in the very angle or corner where they meete, is a famous marie towne named *Vsinga*, being a hundred and fiftie myles distant from the chiefe cite of *Dolca*. To this marie towne, from the higher countreys, are sent the precious fures of *Barternes*, *Sables*, *Uolues*, & such other, which are rechaunged for wyne & other kyndes of wares & marchandises. By these *Adansters*,

Fures.

And so forth, as many doe marvyle that such plenty of hony should bee in so rude a countrey, I haue thought good to declare the reason and naturall cause hereof. It is therefore to be considered, that like as spices, gums, and odoriferous fruites are engendered in hotte regions, by continuall heate duryng all the whole yere, without impressiō of the mortifying qualite of colde, whereby all thynges are constrained as they are dilated by heate, even so in colde and moyst regions (whose moystrure is thynner and more waterye then in hot regions) are flowers engendered more abundantly, as caused by impressiō of less and signer heate, which yngendring in thynner matter of

The naturall
cause of much
hony in colde
regions.
Summer and
wyne in hotte
countreys.

Floures in
colde regions.

2111111111

Just

moistly

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

water the moysture, lesse condeite then the matter of gummes
 and spyces, and other vnicuous fruities and trees growyng in hot
 regions. For although (as Ponsler sayeth here before) the re-
 gion of Malocula beareth neither vines or Olives, or any other
 fruities of sweete nature, by reason of the coldeite thereof, never-
 thelesse, forasmuch as floures (whereof hony is chiefly made) may
 in sommer season growe abundantly in the playnes, mary-
 shes, & woodes, not onely on the ground, but also on trees in colde
 regions, it is agreeable to good reason, that great plenty of ho-
 ny should be in suche regions as abounde with floures, which
 are brought forth with the hyst degree of heate, and hyst ap-
 proche of the sunne, as appeareth in the spring tyme, not only
 by the springyng of floures in fieldes and Gardeynes, but also
 of blossomes of trees springyng before the leaues or fruities, as
 the hyghter and thynner matter hyst dyatone out with the lowest
 and least degree of heate: as the lyke is seene in the acte of
 spring, whereby all thynne and lyght moystures are lyf-
 ted up by the hyst degree of the fyre: and the heauyest and thyc-
 kest moystures are dyatone out with more vehement fyre. As we
 may therefore in this case compare the generation of floures to
 the heat of May, the generation of gummes to the heat of June,
 and spyces to the heat of July: Euen so, in suche colde regions
 whole summer agreeth rather with the temperate heate & moys-
 ture of May, then with che extreme heate of the other monethes,
 that heate is more apte to bring forth abundance of floures, as
 thynges caused by moderate heate, as playnly appeareth by their
 tast and sauour, in which is no sharpe qualitie of heate, eyther by-
 ting the tongue, or offendyng the head, as is in spices, gums, and
 fruities of hotte regions. And as in colde and playne regions, mo-
 derate heate, with abundance of moysture, are causes of the gene-
 ration of floures (as I haue sayde) so lykwyse the length of the
 dayes and shortnesse and warmenesse of the nyghtes in sommer
 season, in such colde regions, is a great helpe hereunto. Carda-
 nus writeth in his booke *De Plantis*, that hysamble & fenice growe
 not but in colde regions, as doeth wheate in temperate regions:
 and that spices and hot herbes, can not growe in colde regions,
 forasmuch as beyng of thynne substance, they should soone be
 moystified & extinct by excessive colde. For (as he sayeth) nothing

floures of trees.

the hyst degree of trees.

An example of the degrees of hyst.

The generation of floures by moderate heat.

Long dayes and short nyghtes.

spyces.

shall.

can

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

can conuert rype, and attenuate the substance of fruites without the helpe of ayre, agreeable to the natures of such thinges as are brought forth in the same, although it may doe this in rootes. But in manner all flowers are of sweete savour, so much as the maystare that is in them, being thicke and but little, is by means heate loose and easily conuerted or made rype. Some also as are loose rype, are loose tatten, according to the proverbe.

Plinie, although in the .x. booke of his naturall hystorie. Cap. lviij. he sayeth that honey is gathered of the flowers of all trees and herbes of plantes, excepte linell and the beards called *Clematis* (which some call *Goose foot*) yet he affirmeth that it descendeth from the ayre: for in the .xii. Chapter of the same booke, he sayeth thus.

This cometh from the ayre at the rising of certayne starres, and especially at the rising of *Sirius*, and not before the rising of *Vergilia* (which are the seven starres called *Pleiasides*) in the hypping of the day. For then at the moonyng (rising) the leaves of trees are founde most with a sweete dewe: Inasmuch that suche as have been abode under the firmament at that tyme, have they apperell amprinted with liquor, and the beards of they head clamy. And whether this bee the sweete of heaven, or as it were a certayne spectyll of the starres, ether the fume of the ayre purgynge it selfe, I woulde it were pure, liquide, & simple of his owne nature, as it first falleth from above. But now descending so farre, and infected, not only with suche unclean vapours and exhalations, as it meeteth with by the way, but afterwards also corrupted by the leaves of trees, beards, and flowers of sundry castes and qualities, and by howe soever in stomaches of the bees (for they vomite it at their mouthes) as also by long reserpyng the same in Hives, it neverthelesse reteyneth a great parte of the heavenly nature &c. Agayne in the .xiiij. Chapter of the same booke he sayeth, that in certayne regions towards the North, as in some places of Germany, honey is founde in suche quantitie, that there have been scene honey combes of eight foote long, and blacke in the hollow part. By the which wordes of Plinie, and by the principles of naturall philosophie, it doeth appere that abundance of honey should chiefly be engendred in suche regions, where the heat of summer

The favour of flowers.

What Plinie sayeth of honey.

Virgilia is a starre called Canicula, that is, the Dogge, of whom the particular beards have they name.

What to buy.

Howe honey is collected.

Howe of great quantitie in some regions.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Summer is temperate and continuall, as well by nyght as by day, as it is not in hot regions, where the nyghts be long and colde, as is declared in the Decades. For lyke as suche thinges as are sponed by continuall heate, mouyng, and circulation, are byndered by refrigeration or colde (as appeareth in the arte of styllyng and hatchyng of egges) even so by the action of temperate and continuall heate, without interposition of contrarie and moytifying qualite, crude thinges are in short tyme made rypp, sowre made sweete, thicke made thynne, heauie made light, grosse made subtyle, harde made soft, dead made luyng, and in fine, bodyes made spirites, as manifestly appeareth in the marueylous woorkes of dygestion of luyng beastes, whereby the finest parte of theyr nourishment is turned into blood, and the finest of that blood conuerted into spirites, as the lyke is also seene in the nourishment of trees, plantes, and hearbes, & all other thinges that growe on the ground, all which are moued, digested, subtiliate, attenuate, ryped, and made sweete by the action of this continuall heate whereof I haue spoken. To conclude therefore, if hony be eyther the sweete of the starres, or the iuice of the appy purgyng it selfe (as Plinie wytteth) or other wyse engendred of subtyle and fine vapours ryling from the earth, and concocted or digested in the appy by the sayde continuall and moderate heate, it may seeme by good reason that the same should be engendred in sommer season moze abundantly in colde regions then in hot, for the causes aforesayde. And that it may by authoritie and reason moze manifestly appeare, both that the heate of sommer in colde regions is continuall (as I haue sayde) and also that the colde in wynter is not there so intolerable to inhabitauntes of those regions as other doe thynke, I haue thought good for the better declaration hereof, to adde hereunto what I haue gathered out of the booke of *Ziglenus*, wyntzen of the *Alpthe* regions.

Hot nyghts in colde regions. A similitude.

Natural heat both subtyle and digests all thinges.

Subtyle vapours digested by heate.

Colde regions.

Regions.

Fin. III.

Of

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frostie sea;

Of the North regions, and of the moderate and continual
 heate in colde regions, aswell in the nyght as in the day
 in sommer season: Also howe thole regions are
 habitable to th inhabitants of the same,
 contrary to the opinion of the
 olde wryters.

Ziglerus.



Of this matter, Ziglerus in his booke of the
 North regions in the description of Scandia,
 wryteth as foloweth.

We will increase of this matter, not as
 putting the same in question as did the olde
 wryters, nor gathering judgement deducted
 of reasons in way of argument, forasmuche
 as we are already more certayne by hylogic that these cold regi-
 ons are inhabited. We will first therefore shew by natural reason,
 and by consideration of the sphaere, declare howe by the helpe of
 man and arte, colde regions are inhabited without damage or de-
 struction of lpyng beastes: And will first speake of the qualitie
 of sommer, declaring howe it is there augmented. Yet intend I
 not to comprehend all that may be sayde in this matter, but on-
 ly rehearse suche reasons and similitudes as are most apparent
 and easie to be understood.

The qualitie of
 sommer in
 colde regions.

The course of
 the Sunne.

Vapours.
 About and
 warme nyghts

Godblande.

In such regions therefore, as are extended from the burnt lye
 or Equinoctiall toward the North, as much as the linne ryleth
 higher over them, so much are they the more burnt with heat, as
 Africa, because it ryleth highest over them, as they are nearest to
 the Equinoctial: & taryng with them so much the shorter tyme,
 causeth shorter dayes, with longer & colder nyghtes, to restore the
 damage of the day past, by reason of the moisture consumed by
 vapour. But in such regions over the which the sun ryleth lower
 (as in Sarmatia) it remaineth there the longer in the day, and
 causeth so much the shorter and warmer nyghtes, as receyving
 warme vapours of the day past, which vapours helpe the woork
 of the day. I speake as I have founde by experience, sayth Vp-
 liensis: For I have felte the sommer nyghtes scarcely tollerable
 for heate in Godblande, whereas I felte them colde in Rome.
 This benefite of the increase of the day doeth augment so much
 the more in colde regions, as they are nearer the poles: and
 ceaseth

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

ceaseth not vntill it come directly ouer the center of poynte of the axes of arceltree of the worlde, where the sunne being, at the hyghest in sommer, is eleuate about. xxiii. degrees: In which regions, one continuall day consisteth of. vi. monethes from the spring tyme, by the standing of the sunne (called *Solstitium*) in the signe of Cancer, to Autumne. The Sunne therefore, without any offence of the nyght, gyueth his influence vpon those landes with heate that neuer ceaseth during that tyme, which maketh to the great increase of sommer, by reason of continuance. Wee haue now therefore thought good to gather, by a certayne coniecture, howe greatly we thinke the sommer to be increased heereby.

One day of. vi. monethes.

Howe the sommer is increased in colde regions.

We haue before declared howe hygh the sunne is eleuate ouer the regions that are vnder the poles at the staye of the sunne: And so many partes is it eleuate in Rome at the staye of the sunne in wynter (that is) at the shortest day in the yeere. But here, in the nyd wynter, the sunne at noonetyde is beneficiall, and byngeth forth floures, Roses, and Ieli-floures. I haue gathered some in winter in the moneth of December, not procured at home by humane arte, but growyng in open Gardens in maner in euery bed vnder the bare heauen, brought forth only by the sunne. But this benignitie of the sunne, continueth not past syue houres in the naturall day, forasmuch as the operation thereof is extinct by the coldenesse of the nyght folowynge. But if this benefite myght be receyued without hinderaunce of the nyght, as it is vnder the poles, and so continue many monethes in hot regions vnto wynter, it should surely bring forth many wonderful thinges, if moisture fayled not. And by this condition thus propounded, we may well conceiue that the Romane wynter, although it be not hotte, yet to be equall in heate to the full spring tyme in the same citie, during the tyme of the sayd syue houres. And thus by a similitude of the height of the sunne vnder both places, and of the knowen qualitie of the Romane heauen, and by the access of the sunne to such places where the longest day continueth certayne moneths, we may gather that sommer, in places vnder the pole, is lyke vnto and equall with the full Romane spring.

Rome.

Cold nyghtes in hot regions.

The Romane wynter.

But the more difficult question, is of the tyme of the. vi. monethes in the which the Sunne leaueth those regions,

One night of. vi. monethes.

An.iii.

and

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Objections.

and goeth by the contrary or ouerthwarte circle toward the south in wynter . For they say that at that tyme, those regions are desoynded with horrible darkenesse, and nyghtes not increased, whiche may be the cause that beastes can not seeke theyr foode: And that also the colde should then bee intollerable . By which double euyls all thynges constrayned should dye, so that no beast were able to abyde the iniuries of wynter and samyne insuyng thereof : but that all beastes should peryshe before the sommer folowyng, when they should byyng forth theyr broode or succession : and that for thise causes, the sayde colde clyme should bee perpetually desolate and inhabitable . To all which objections, we answered in this maner.

The tyme
lightes.

As touchyng the nyghtes not increased, I say, that it was not conuenient to assume that for any reason . For not as the Sunne falleth, so sodeynly commeth the darke nyght: but that the euenyng doeth substitute and prolong the day long after, as also the day spyng or dawnyng of the day, gyueth a certayne lyght before the rysing of the Sunne : After the which, the residue of the nyght that recepueth no lyght by the sayde euenyng and moynyng twilightes, is accomplished by the lyght of the Moone, so that the nyghtes are sildome vnaugmented . Let this bee an example proued by our temperate regions, whereby we may vnderstande the condition of the nyght vnder the pole: Therefore euen there also the twilightes helpe the nyght a long tyme, as we will more presently demonstrate . It is approoued by the Astronomers, that the Sunne descendyng from the highest halfe sphere by eightiene paralels of the vnder horizon, maketh an ende of the twilight, so that at the length the darke night succeedeth : And that the Sunne appoichyng, and rysing aboue the highest halfe sphere by as many paralels, doeth diminish the nyght and increase the twilight . Agayne, by the position or placyng of the sphere vnder the pole, the same is the horizontall that is the Equinoctiall . Those paralelles therefore that are paralelles to the horizontall lyne, are also paralelles to the Equinoctiall . So that the Sunne descendyng there vnder the horizon, doeth not byyng darke nyghtes to those regions, vntyll it come to the paralels distant, xiiii. partes from the Equinoctiall.

The lyght of
the Moone.

The nyght
vnder the pole.

As demonstra-
tion.

Durynge

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Duryng the tyme of these sayde tye monethes of darke-
 nesse under the pole, the nyght is destitute of the benefite of
 the Sunne and the sayde troyghytes, onely for the space of
 thre monethes, in the whiche the Sunne goeth and returneth
 by the portion of the overthwart circle . But yet neyther this
 tyme of thre monethes is without remedy from heauen . For
 the Moone with her full globe increased in lycht, hath accesse
 at that tyme, and illuminateth the monethes lackyng lycht,
 every one by them selues, halfe the course of the moneth ; by
 whose benefite it cometh to passe that the nyght, named as
 vnaugmented, possesseth those regions no longer then one mo-
 neth and a halfe, neyther that continually or all at one tyme:
 but this also diuided into thre sortes of shorter nyghtes, of the
 whiche every one endureth for the space of two weekes, and
 are illuminate of the Moone accordyngly . And this is the rea-
 son conceyued of the power of the spherre, whereby we testifie that
 the sommers and nyghtes under the pole are tollerable to ly-
 uynge beastes . But we wyl not declare by other remedies
 of nature and arte, that this colde so greatly feared, is more
 remisse and tollerable then our opinion : so that, compared to
 the nature of suche beastes as lyue there, it may be abydden.
 And there is no doubt but there are autours of more antiquitie
 then that age in the whiche any thyng was exactly knowne or
 discouered of the North regions . The olde wynters there-
 fore perswaded onely by naked coniecture, dyd geather what
 they myght determyne of those places : Or rather, by the
 estimation of heauen, the whiche, because they felte it to bee
 hardely tollerable to them selues, and lesse to men boine in
 the tyme of Egypt and Grecia, tooke thereby an argument
 of the whole habitable earth . The hytorie of Strabo is knowen,
 that a pott of brasse, whiche was broken in sunder with frosen
 water, was brought from Pontus, and shewed in Delphis in to-
 ken of a greuous wynter . Here therefore, they that so great-
 ly feared the wynter (suche as chaunceth to the earth under the
 xlviii. paralele) and therefore consecrated that broken pott to
 the temple of Appollo : what coude suche men truly define
 vpon regions so farre without that paralele, whether they
 were

The Moone.

Remedies of
nature & art.The olde
wynters per-
suaded by con-
iecture.A broken pott
broken with
frost.

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frosty sea.

were inhabited or not? But suche as folowed these, beyng contented with thymencions of the olde autours, and bozne in manner under the same qualite of heauen, persysted wplyngly in the same opinon, with more confidence then consideration of the thynges whereof we nowe intreate: so lyghtly was that opinon recepued as touchyng the inhabitable clime vnder the poles. But we with better confidence and saith (soyalimiche as we are not instructed with coniectures) intend to staude agaynst the sentence of the olde autours, affirmyng the North regions within the colde clime to be inhabited with berrynges, coddes, haddockes, and byettes, tumpes, and other great fshes, with thynfinite number whereof, tables are furnyshed through a great parte of Europe: All whiche are taken in the North sea extended beyonde our knowlege. This sea at certayne tymes of the yeere, poureth forth his plentifulnes, or rather dyueth forth his increafe to seeke newe mansions, and are here taken in theyr passage. Furthermore also, euen the mouthes of the riuier of Tyber receiued a fsh as a newe gest sent from the north sea: this swamme twise through Fraunce, and twise through Spayne, ouerpasse the *Ligurion* and *Tuscan* sea, to communicate her selfe to the cite of Rome. The lakes also and ryuers of those regions are replenyshed with fsh: insomuch that no power of colde is able to extinguysh the thyncrease of the yeere folowing, and the succession reparable so many hundred yeeres. And I plaine-ly thinke, that if it should of necessitie folowe, that one of these two elementes, the earth and the water, should be destructiue to lypung creatures, the water should chiefly haue wrought this effecte. But this is founde so tractable, that in the depe wynter, both that increafe is brought forth, and fshing is also exercised. The lande is lykewise inhabited with like plentifulnesse. But that we wander not to farre, let the sayth hereof rest in the hypothesis folowing, wherein we intend to declare howe by the power of nature and industry of man, this commoditie may come to passe. Therefore as touchyng nature, we suppose that the diuine prouidence hath made nothyng vncommunicable, but to haue geuen suche order to all thynges, whereby euery thyng may be tollerable to the next. The extremities of the elementes consent with theyr next. The ayre is grosse about the earth and water:

Fishes of the North sea.

The North sea.

The qualite of water.

The land.

The diuine prouidence in moderatynge the elementes.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

water: but thyme and hot about the fyre. By this providence
of nature, the uttermost sea is very salt. And salt (as witnesseth
Plinie) pelveth the saltnesse of Oyle. But Oyle, by a certayne
nature heate, is of proprietie agreeable to fyre. The sea then,
being al of such qualitie, potweth sooth it selle farre upon the
greene landes, whereby by reason of the saltnesse thereof, it moveth
and stirreth by generative heate, as by facnesse it noth
with the fecunditie of thynges generate. It groweth this fructi-
finesse to the earth at certayne floods, although the earth also
it selle have in his inner bowels the same lively and noystr-
ing heate, whereby not only the Dennes, Caves, and hollow plar-
ces, but also springes of water are made warme: & this so much
the more, in how muche the wynter is more debement. This
thyng doth more appeare by this example, that the mountaynes
of *Norway* and *Sweblands* are fructifull of metales. In the which,
silver and copper are concoct and molten into venes, which can
scarcely by done in soynaces. By this reason also, the vapours
and hot exhalations pearcyng the earth and the waters, and
through both thole natures breacyng sooth into the ayre, tem-
perately the qualite of heauen, & maketh it tollerable to beastis,
as witnesseth the huge bygnesse of the *Whales* in thole seas,
with the strength of body, and long lyfe of such beastis as lyve
on the land: which thyng coulde not be, except all thyngs were
there commodiously noystrid by the benefite of the heauen and
the ayre. For nothyng that in the tyme of encrease is hypozed
by any iniurie, or that is cypit lewde at the tyme is lyved, can pro-
spere wel. Nepever are such thynges as live there, offended with
theyr natural wynter, as though an *Egyptian* or *Esiopian* were
soderly conveighed into thole cold regions. For they were in
long tyme, by tittle and litle, brought hysl acquainten with the
nature of that heauen, as maye be prooved both by the lyfe of
man, and by the hystorie of holy scripture. They that were led
from *Mesopotamia*, and that famous *Tower of Babilon* towards
the North partes of the world, in the hysl dispercion of nati-
ons, did not immediately passe to the extreme boundes, but plan-
ted theyr habitacions first under a myddle heauen, between both,
as in *Thracia*, and *Ponus*, where theyr posteritie was accu-
stomed the better to susteyne the rigour of *Scythia* and *Tar-*
nais

The nature of
the sea.

Salt.

Generative
heate.

Outward colde
is cause of in-
warde heate.

Metals.

Vapours and
exhalations.

Whales.

Beastis.

Hereby maye be
considered the
cause of the
death of our
men that
sape directly to
Gauna.

The passage
from one extre-
mitie, to an-
other, but by a
meane.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the Northeast frosty sea.

nals, as he that cometh from winter to summer, may the better after abide the heat and frost, being first hardened thereto by the froddes of Aquitaine. In like maner mortal men, accustomed to beare the hardnesse of places next unto them, were thereby at the length more confirmed to sustaine the extremities. And here also, if any sharpnesse remaine that may seeme intolerable, nature hath so provided for the same, with other remedies. For the land and sea, hath geuen unto beastes, deepe and large Caves, Denes, and other hollowe places, and secreete corners in mountaynes and rocks, both on the land and by sea banckes, in the which are ever conteyned warme vapoures, so muche the more intent and vehement, in how much they are the more constrained by extreme cold. Nature hath also geuen halleyes, diuerced and defended from the North windes. She hath likewise covered beastes with haire, so muche the thycker, in how much the vehementie of cold is greater: by reason wherof the best and richest furies are brought from those regions, as Sables, whose pype is growne to great excessse, next unto gold and precious stones, and are esteemed princely ornaments. The beastes that beare these furies, are hunted cheefely in winter (whiche thyng is more strange) because their haire is then thicker and cleauech faster to the skin. How greivous then shal we thinke the wynter to be there, where this litle beast liueth so well, and where the hunters may search the Denes and hauntes of such beastes through the woods and snow? But such beastes, the condition of whose bodies is so tender that they are not able to abide the inturie of the cold, either lye byd in winter, or change their habitacion, as do certayne beastes also in our climate. Nature hath furthermore geuen remedie to man, both by art and industry to defende him selfe both abrode and at home. Abrode with a thicke vesture, and the same well dowbeled. At home, with large fyres on Hearthes, Chymneyes, and in Stoooves for the daye, with close Chambers, and Couches, soft and warme Beddes for the nyght: by whiche remedies they mitigate the wynters, which seeme rigorouse to straungers, although they are to the inhabitants more tollerable then our opinion, as in verbe by the first naturall mixture or composition of their bodies, such thyngs are agreeable to them, as seeme very hard to other. The Lion in Affrik and

Caves and Denes.

halleyes.

The best furies. Sables.

Beastes that lye byd in wynter.

All beastes haue the nature of the place where they are engendred.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

and the heart in *Scandinavia*, are fierce, as in theyr *speeches* strength
 and vigour: but translated into a contrary *beautie*, are of little
 strength and courage. The *Swede* called *Circulus* (which some
 think to be the *Scythia*) doth not carry the *Impetus*: yet do the
Circus come at that time. The *Scythians* will accost the *Ro-*
mane beaumen as *intemperate* fencers, whereas neuertheless there
 is none more *holborne*. Such as haue been *trudely* brought
 up, if they come *knowingly* into the *camp*, can not easily be
 hunger, murther, beate, passages through *ruers*, battayles,
 sieges, and *assaults*: But the *old* *Scythian*, exercised in the
warres, teacheth these as *meditations* of the *Scyth*, as *hardened*
 thereto by long *experience*. He that hath been *accustomed* to the
heat of the *circle*, and will attempt the *slaying* of the *poet*
Virgil, *Nudas ara, sero nudas*, that is, *naked* and *bare*, without
house and *home*, shall to his *peril* make an *end* of the *best*, *Habere*
frigor a febram (that is) he shall haue the *coole* ague. Such
 things therfore as *seeme* hard *was* to be, being *accustomed* by
little and *little*, become *more* tollerably. In *which* that the *ex-*
cess of *infirmities* by such degrees, doth *often* times *growe* to *pro-*
digious effectes, *farre* beyond our *expectation*. And thus we
seeme to haue made *sufficient* demonstration, by *heaven*, *nature*,
 and *art*, whereby it may *appeare*, that *no* part of the *land* or *sea* is
denied to *living* creatures. The *reader* may also *perceive* some
large matter of *reasons* and *examples* may be *opened* by the
hearing of our *opinion*, wherein we rest. It is therfore *thought*
 of the *ancient* *authors* *gave* place, and the *consent* of the *newe*
writers agree to this *his*top, not as *nowe* at the *length* *compre-*
hended (whereas before many *hundred* yeeres *Germanie* and
Scandia had *entered* of *merchandise* not *learned* by the *large*
gulf of *Goshia*) but as *nowe* by our *commentaries* brought to
light: and *hauing* sayde thus much in *manner* of a *preface*, we
 will *nowe* *proceede* to *mappe* of the *North* regions.

What exercise may be.

What sicknesses.

Scandia.

Scandia.

Scania, Scandania, or Scandianarckia, is as much to
 saye as saye *Dania*, or saye *Denmark*. *Plin* in our place,
 nameth it *Scandia*, and in an other *Scandinavia*, where he
 no *saith* in the *examples*.

Scania is saye in the
 such tongue.

31

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.

It is named *Schandia*, by reason of the superfluous and fruitless sterility thereof. And this is well say that in beneficiall breuen, fertilitye of grounds, commonitie of hauens and marie townes, abundance of ryuers and fysh, plentye of beastes, great quantities of metall, as golde, silver, copper, and leade, diligent cultivating the grounds, with townes and cities well inhabited and governed by civile lawes, it cometh place to none other fortunate region. This was in maner unknowne to the olde Greekes and Latins, as may appeare by this argument, that with one consent they affirmed, that in these north regions the colde zone or climate, was condemned to perpetuall snowe, intollerable to all living creatures. For fewe of them have made mention hereof as to be inhabited, Among whom *Plinie*, as one of the chiefe, saith in his fourth booke, that *Schondania* is of unknowne bignesse: and surely that portion thereof to be knowne, which is inhabited with the nation of the *Hilleniones* in fiftie villages: *Striether* yet is *Erings* lesse in opinion. Other more ancient then *Plinie*, have placed most fortunate regions, with men of long life (which the Greekes call *Macrobios*) and of most innocent behavoure vnder the tracte of those lawes: and that there came from thence to *Dolphos*, certayne religious virgines, with bowes and giftes consecrated to *Apollo*: And furthermore, that that nation observed this institution, untill the sadde virgins were violated of them, of whom they were received as strangers. These are most cleare testimonies of Antiquitie, both of the greatnesse of *Schandia*, and the people that inhabite the same, although they were since unknowne: as lykewyse the *Gobes* departing from these North lawes, although they obtayned the temple of the regions about the marches of *Meotis*, and the coastes of the sea *Faxinus*, with the realme of *Denmarke* (wherof that is thought to be a portion whiche is nowe called *Transilvania*) and the bankes of the ryuer of *Danubius*, and in fine, invaded the *Romane* Empire, yet were not the regions well knowne from whence they took their originall. Therefore lyke as part of the olde wyriters are insufficient witnesses, to testifye of our narrations as touchyng these lawes unknowne to them: Even so the other parte whiche excludes the same as uninhabitable, are to be commended, leaste they, authoritye, being commended, *Wende* engender

The fertilitye of
Schandia.

As meaneth
Diaboyus
Scythia

Chimastons
of the *Scythes*.

Transilvania.

rather opinions not agreeable or convenient to the nature of places. Sigismundus Libanus, in his commentaries of Adosonia, writeth thus. Scandia or Scandia, is no Island (as some have thought) but part of the continent or firme land of Suetia, which by a long tract reacheth to Cosland: and that now the kyng of Denmarke possesseth a great part thereof. But whereas the writers of these thynges have made Scandia greater then Suetia, and that the Goshes and Lombardes came from thence, they seeme in my opinion to comprehend these three kyngdomes as it were in one booke, only under the name of Scandia, forasmuch as then, that part of land that lyeth betwene the sea Balthicum (which floweth by the coastes of Finlandia) and the frozen sea, was unknown: and that by reason of so manye myrthes, innumerable rivers, and intemperatenesse of heauen, it is yet rude, uncultured, and litle knowen. Which thyng hath been the cause that some iudged at that was called by the name of Scandia, to be one great Island.

The Goshes & Lombardes.

Gronelande.



Gronelande is interpreted greene land, so called for the great encrease and fruitfulness of pasture. By reason whereof, what great plenty of cattails there is, it may hereby appere, that at such time as Shippes may passe thither, they set forth great heapes of Cheese and Butter to be sold, whereby we coniecture that the land is not rough with barren mountaynes. It hath two Cathedrall Churches under the Dignation of Archidia. No one of these, was of late years a Bishop appoynted, only by the title of a Suffragane, in consideration that while the Metropolitane doth neglect the direction of religion for the distance of the place, and difficult navigation, the people is in manner false to gentilitie, being of them kind of notable wicces, given to magickall artes. For it is sayd that they (as all the people of Laponia) do raise tempestes on the sea with magickall incantations, and bying such Shippes into danger as they intend to spoyle. They use litle Shippes made of Leacher, and sale agaynst the insuing of the sea and rocks, and with them assault other Shippes. Peter Adair of Angles, writeth in his Decades

Fruitfull pasture.

Religious neglect.

Incantations.

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

Of the northeft frosty sea.

The blage of
Sebastian Cabot
in the fro-
zen sea.

Gronelande.

Wardhus.

Lapponia and
Gronelande.

Schoeni.

Cabot tolde me
that this is in
of fresh water &
not of the sea.

A conuersion
of salt water &
fresh.

The sea be-
tween Norway
and Island.

Terra Viridis.

of the Spaniards navigations that Sebastian Cabot, sayling from England continually toward the North, folowed that course so farre, that he chanced upon great flakes of yse in the Month of July: and that diuerting from thence, he folowed the coast by the streyke bending toward the South, untill he came to the chymie of the Island of Hispaniola, aboute Cuba, an Islande of the Canbales. Which narration hath giuen me occasion to extende Groneland beyond the promontorie of cape of Huisfarch, to the contyneut of some lande of Lapponia, about the castell of Wardhus: whiche thing I dyd the rather, for that the reuerende Archebysshop of Nitrosia, constantly affirmed that the sea bendeth there into the fourme of a crooked Elbowe. It agreeth herewith also, that the Lappones consent with them in the lyke Magicall practises, and do n eether embrace the Christian religion, nor refuse it: whereby I haue thought this lykness of customes to be betwene them, because they liue together in one continent. The distance lykewyse, seemeth not to disagree. For betwene both these people, the distance is not full two hundred Schoeni, every one being a space of ground containing threescorfe furlonges, which make seauen myles, & a halfe. It furthermore agreeth with this coniecture that Cabot chanced into such yse. And albeit, as touching the Month of July, I will contend it is not well rehearsed, no although he had sailed under the poole, for such reasons as we haue declared before to the contrary neuertheless, that at some tyme he sailed by yse, this testifieth in that he sailed not by the wayne sea, but in places neare unto the land, comprehending & embracing the sea in fourme of a gulfe, where as for the same cause the gulfe of Greenland is frozen, because it is streyght and narrow: in the which also the little quantite of salte water is overcome by the abundance of fresh water of many and great ryuers that fall into the gulfe. But betwene Norway and Island, the sea is not frozen, for the contrary cause, forasmuch as the power of fresh water is there overcome of the abundance of the salte water. There is a fame (but of vncertaine authoritie) that the Spaniards saye at this present to Gronelands, and to an other lande, whiche they call Terra Viridis, that is, the greene lande, sayling from thence) suche wares as are founde in Gronelande, & toward the North, it reacheth to the unknowne

unknowne land under the pole, from whence also the theenes and robbers of the Pigmei come into this lande. Which is an argument that the regions under the pole are inhabited, & almost surrounded with the sea, as are they whiche the Cosmographers call *Chersonesi. or Peninsula* (that is) almost *Ilandes*.

Pigmei.

The description of Gronlande.

The description of the East syde, which lyeth towarde Nor way.

Wardhus Castle.	54.	70.	30.
Towarde the North.	53.	30. 71.	30.
The first extension.	40.	71.	40.
The second extension.	28.	72.	
Quilsarch. promont.	22.	67.	
The extension.	5.	61.	45.

It is continued from thence by the coastes of the lande of *Baccallan.*

Baccallan.

Towarde the West and North, it is termined with an unknowne ende of landes and seas.

Ilande.

Ilande is interpreted the land of *Ice*, and is called of the olde *Wyppers Thyle*. It is extended betweene the South and the North, almost two hundred schoenes in longitude. It is for the most parte full of mountaynes, and uncultured. But in the playnes it hath such fruitfull pastures, that they are sayne sometimes to dytue the beastes from theyr feeding, lest they should be suffocate with too much fatnesse. This *Ilande* is famous by the strange myracles of nature, of the whiche *Saxo Grammaticus* in his hystorie of *Denmarke*, and *Olaus Gothus*, in his description of the North landes, doe make mention. There are in it three mountaynes of marueylous height, the toppes whereof are covered with perpetuall snowe; but the nether partes of them, are of lyke nature to the mountayne *Etna*, in the *Ilande* of *Sicilie*, boyleng with continuall flames of fyre, and casteng forth bymestone. One of these is named *Helga*, and the other *Mons Crucis* (that is) the mounte of the crosse. The third is named *Hecla*, whose flames neyther consume flaxe or tow, masters most apte to take fyre, nor yet are quenched with water. And with

Ilande called Thyle.

Schoene in length.

Myracles of nature in Ilande.

Three marueylous mountaynes.

Helga.

Hecla.

Da. i.

lyke

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

the light as the heat of great artillery is quenched by the
 lence of tye, run to by the consumption and repugnance of tye,
 colde, and bymstone, great stones are herre thowne into the
 ayre. Neare unto these mountaynes are three chynkes of open
 places in the earth, of huge bygnesse, and such depth (especially at
 the mount *Hecla*) that no light can attayne thereto. But to such
 as looke into them, there first appeares men as though they were
 drowned, and per breathyng sooth they soules: who being ex-
 horted by theyr friendes to resorte to theyr stone, they answere
 with mournyng voyce and greivous sighes, that they must de-
 parte from thence to the mount *Hecla*, and therewith sodaynely
 vanishe out of sight. He stretcheth about the *Islande* for the space
 of seven or eight monethes, making by runnyng togeather a
 certayne miserable washyng and groupng noyse, not unlyke the
 voyce of wain. This habitaunters chynke, that in this *Isle* and the
 mount *Hecla*, are the places where the evyll soules of theyr peo-
 ple are tormented. If any man take a great portion of this *Isle*,
 and keepe it as diligently as may be in a close vessel or cofer,
 the same doeth so vanishe at the tyme when the other *Isle* about
 the *Islande* dissolureth, that not so much as one droppe of water of
Isle can thereof be founde.

Strange vi-
sions.

It.

A strange
chynke.

Four springes
of contrary
nature.

Abundance
of bymstone.

Dyed by

Scariness of
cows.

Not farre from these mountaynes reachyng towarde the sea
 coastes, are four springes of water, of most byvers and con-
 trary nature. The first, by reason of his perpetuall and fervent
 heate, sodaynely turneth all bodyes, that are cast therein, into
 stones, referuyng neverthelesse theyr byll forme and shape. The
 seconde, is of intolerable colde. The thyrde, is sweeter then
 honey, and most pleasant to quench thyrst. The fourth, is playne
 popson, pestilent, and deadly. There is furthermore in these
 springes suche abundance of bymstone, that a thousande
 pounde weight thereof is bought for litle, as for the tenth parte
 of a dukate. Theyr chiefe mooves, are byen byle, as *Wolcs*, *Bay-
 dens*, *Wylvers*, *Walpas*, *Sheepeshepes*, and such other, which
 they exchange for wheat, and such other thinges, as are brought
 thither from *Lubecke*, *Danzebow*, and *Amsterdam*. For they
 have observances such scarcenesse of corne, that they be dyed byll
 in the tyme of hard, although in sommer the *Islande* flourisheth
 with greene and fruitful meadowes, that they are sayne for many
 la

Eden. The decades.
Bancroft Library.

to tyne they beastes from pasture, least they should suffocate for
 so much farnesse, as I haue sayde before. They make very good
 butter, and apte to be vled in matters of phisike. There are found
 diuers kindes of good Haukes, as Faulcons, Serfaulcons, Lan-
 ners, and Wyerhaukes: Also Hauens, Crows, Beates, Hares,
 and Foxes, both whiter and blacke. They haue most swift hoyles,
 and such as run .xxx. miles continually without rest or haite. They
 haue many churches: & houses builded of the bones of Whales
 and other great fyshes. The nauigation is not open to this Island
 but in sommer season: and that only for the space of foure mo-
 nethes, by reason of the colde and Ice whereby the passage is
 stopped. If any stryfe or debate arys on the sea among the mari-
 ners for the commoditie of the hauen, the gouernour of the place,
 although he haue knowledge thereof, yet doeth he not punysh
 them, forasmuche as it apperteyneth not to his office to decerne
 such chinges as are done on the sea, but only on the lande. Whips
 are there ostentymes in great peryll, by reason of Whales, & such
 other monsters of the sea, except the Hariners take good heed,
 and keepe them far from the shypps with the noyse of Dymmes,
 and emptye barrells cast into the sea. There are many Synstrels
 and other that play on instruments, with the swete noyse wher-
 of, they vse to allure soules and fyshes to their nettes and snares,
 Whay also, lye lurking in caues and denmes, to auoyd the sharp-
 nesse of cold, as the Africanes doe the lyke to defend them selues
 from the heate. On the top of a certaine mountayne called *Wys-
 carb.* (lying betweene Island and Grunland, or Greonland) is
 erected a Shyppmans quadrant of maruepious bygnesse, made by
 two Pyrates, named *Wimligt* and *Bochoast*, in fauour of suche as
 sayle by those coastes, that they may thereby auoyde the daunge-
 rous places lying towarde Greonland.

Haukes.
 Whiter Ha-
 uens.
 Houses of
 Whales bones
 The nauigati-
 on to Islande.

Whales.
 One thing
 scruping for
 contrary vled.

A Shyppmans
 quadrant.

The myddell of the Islande.	7	0	65	30.
The citie Harfol. &c.	7	40	60	42.

Laponia.

The region of *Laponia*, was so named of the people that
 inhabite it. For the Germanes call all suche *La-
 pones*, as are simple or vnapt to chinges. This
 Do. II. people

Eden. The decades.
 Bancroft Library.



